Thomas Fraser Grove.

Ferne.

No. Trent DEFOE 21.F34 1715

Treadwell · Elizabeth · Phillips · Kirstein · Wales · Bradlee · Stewart · Cutter · Kimball · Ford · Reed · Clement · Charlotte Harris · Whitney · Hyde · Bigelow · Skinner · Center · Knapp · Billings · Sewall ·

THE
WILLIAM P. TRENT COLLECTION
WORKS RELATING TO
DANIEL DEFOE
AND HIS TIME

THE PUBLIC LIBRARY
OF THE CITY OF
BOSTON

Purchased from the Income of
SUNDRY TRUST FUNDS

FN711: 29: 3M.

THE
Family Instructor.

In Three Parts.

With a Recommendatory

LETTER

By the Reverend

Mr. *S. WRIGHT.*

LONDON:

Sold by EMAN. MATTHEWS, *at the* Bible *in* Pater-noster-Row; *and* JO. BUTTON, *in* Newcastle upon Tine. 1715.

* Defoe 21. F 34
1715

Trent Defoe
Trent Friends
Jan 17, 1929

A LETTER TO THE PUBLISHER.

My very good Friend!

HAving, *at your Request, read over the Book call'd* The Family Instructor, *I do upon several Accounts very much approve of the Design of it: and wish I could say any thing to recommend it to the Perusal of others.*

The Decay *of* Family Religion *is very visible, and frequently Matter of Complaint; and therefore I doubt not such an Attempt as this will be well receiv'd by all serious and thoughtful Persons among us.* *The*

The Printer *has been faulty to a Degree, that I am afraid will render the Reader very uneasy; and I wish the Author had thought fit to communicate his Papers to you before they had fallen into such Hands: But the Substance of the Book, however, will command Regard, and, if I may judge for others by my self, will afford some Pleasure and Entertainment.*

The First Part *is an amazing Encouragement to* Parents *that have been negligent in the Education of their Children, to set up Family Religion; and is very proper both to convince the Governour of a Family of his Duty, and to direct him in it. It will let us see how much sometimes may be learnt from Children that are very* young; *and also what Way is proper to be taken with those that are* grown up, *and have not been used to any Thing of Regularity.*

The Second Part *is exceeding well contriv'd to Instruct* Masters of Families *in their Care of Apprentices and Servants. And possibly it may be the more useful to some Families, because of the different Sentiments of the Husband and Wife in Matters of Religion; the One being a Worshipper of God with the Dissenters, the Other with the Church of* England.

The

The Third Part *is designed to Instruct Persons in the Disposing of their Children* in Marriage, *and to direct those that are* new married *in their Duty to one another.*

The Notes *upon each* Dialogue *may be very useful, as they are designed to gather up the most important Things in every Dialogue, and present 'em to the Reader in one uninterrupted View.*

I think the whole *of it very much fitted to do good, especially if the Reader be first assured that the Substance of each Narrative is* Real. *And there are some whole Dialogues to which, with very little Alteration, I my self could put* Names *and* Families. *There are some Passages very moving to those who have any* Sense *of* Religion; *and I think it not ill contriv'd to take hold of the Hearts of those who are* loose *and* ignorant.

The Dialogues *are sometimes longer (in my Opinion) than was needful to the Design; and there are now and then some Expressions that may seem a little out of Character; that is, not perfectly suitable to the Circumstances and Capacity of the Person supposed to be speaking, or of the other that is spoken to: But I think there can be no Disgust which will not quickly be taken away, if a Dialogue be read*

over

over at one time. Let but the several main Strokes be carefully observed, and the lesser Incidencies may be hastned over.

I wish that All who peruse this Book may find the same Entertainment, which, in some Parts of it, I have done. And I wish that in every House One of em might lye in common, for the Use of all such as may be willing to look into it. There are Passages suited to all Sorts of Families, and to every Member in them; and who knows but something may occur to the Eyes of those that do but glance into it, that may engage their further Regards and Attention.

I have nothing more to add, but only to tell you, that you have Liberty to make what Use you please of this Letter from

Your Real Friend

and Servant,

S. WRIGHT.

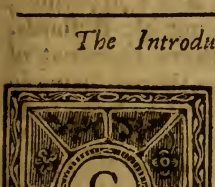
The FAMILY-INSTRUCTOR.

PART I.

Being the *FAMILY Inverted:* Or the *CHILD* Chatechising the *FATHER.*

With the Happy Consequences of it in an Eminent Family in *LONDON.*

The Introduction to the First PART.



Atechising of Children, and instructing them in the Principles of the Christian Religion, has been a Practice in the Church as Ancient as Religion it self; and besides the Nature of the Thing which requires, it was deduc'd from that strict Injunction laid upon the Children of *Israel*, Deut. 6. 7. *And thou shalt teach them diligently unto thy Children*, speaking of the Laws and Statutes which God then commanded *Moses*. And again, *Deut.* 4. 9 *But teach them to thy Sons, and thy Sons Sons.*

It is not the Design of this Undertaking to give a List of Authorities in Scripture for Catechising and Instructing of Children, or the Commendations and Testimonies given there to those that did instruct their Children in the Knowledge and Practice of Religion: That eminent Text is sufficient to this, being the blessed Character given to *Abraham* from God himself, *I know* Abraham, says the Lord, *Gen.* 18. 19. *that he will Command his Children and his Houshold after him*, &c.

But we live in an Age that does not want so much to know their Duty *as to practise it*; not so much *to be taught to know*, as to be made obedient to what they *already know*, and therefore I shall take up no Time in proving this Matter to be a Duty, there's hardly a Wretch so hardned but will readily acknowledge it.

But we are arrived at a Time in which Men will frankly own a thing to be their Duty which *at the same time* they dare omit the Practice of; and innumerable Arts, Shifts and Turns they find out to make that omission easy to themselves, and excusable to others

One Part of this Work is pointed *at such*; if possible, to make them blush at their unaccountable Rashness, and if that may work at all, to shame them out of such a sordid inconsistent Course as that of living in the allow'd Omission of what they acknowledge to be their Duty.

The way I have taken for this, is *entirely New*, and tho' at first Sight it may appear something *Odd*, and the Method *perhaps* may be contemned by some; yet let such blame their own more irregular Tempers, that must have every thing turned into new Models; must be touch'd with *Novelty*, and have their Fancies humour'd *with the Dress* of a thing; and if it be what has been said over and over a thousand times, yet if it has but a different colour'd Coat, or a new Feather in its Cap, it pleases and wins upon them, whereas the same Truths written in the divinest Stile in the World, would be flat, stale and unpleasant without it.

If then, after all the pains which has been taken by ministerial Labour and Instruction, and by the pressing Exhortations and moving Arguments of eminent Divines, even of all Opinions, in their Writings on this Subject, this mean and familiar Method should by

by its Novelty prevail, it will be a happy Undertaking, but no Reproach at all to the Labours of others.

If you Object againſt the Novelty or the Humour of the Work, blame your own vitiated Appetites which would not reliſh it in its old and better Dreſs, not becauſe it was improper or improbable, but becauſe it was old.

Be it ſo then that this is the humour of the Times, and let the Crime of it be never ſo much to be blam'd, yet *at the ſame time* that I blame the Cauſe, I endeavour to comply with the Evil, and firſt gratifie it, in order to reform it.

Since you then will have a Toy, a Novelty, *here it is for you*, read it *YE PARENTS* who neglect inſtructing and praying with, or for your Children; and *if you can help bluſhing*, *DO SO*, and ſet your Names to it; and then we ſhall know who have hardned their Faces moſt againſt the moſt evident Convictions.

There is no room to inquire here who this Tract is directed to, or who it is written by, whether by Church of *England* Man, or Diſſenter; it is evident both need it, it may be uſeful to both, and it is written with Charity to, and for the Benefit of both.

If I ſpeak to the Church of *England* Proteſtants, or to Diſſenting Proteſtants, I might remind them how much more need there is of a Reproof of this kind to them now than ever, ſince the practice of Family Worſhip and Inſtruction is ſo much decay'd amongſt us all, more than ever was known in the Days paſt.

But in the purſuit of this Book care is taken to avoid Diſtinctions of Opinion, and no Offence can be taken here either on the one Side or the other; as I hope *both* are Chriſtians, ſo *both* are treated here as ſuch, and the Advice is impartially directed *to both* without the leaſt Diſtinction.

If you who call your selves Christians and Protestants, will not instruct your Children and Servants, here you will find your Children and Servants instructing you and reproving you too; and both *you* and *your Children* may here meet with Instructions together.

The Father represented here, appears knowing enough, but seems to be one of those professing Christians who acknowledge God in their Mouths, *but taking no effectual Care* to honour him in their Practice; that live in a Round of Religion, as a thing of course; have not the Power of Godliness, nor much of the Form; a kind of a Negative Christian, *a God-I-thank-thee Pharisee*, sound in knowledge, but negligent in Conversation; Orthodox in Opinion, but Hetrodox in Practice; and that I have found out such a Person, is to signifie, that let him be *where* he will, and *who* he will, this Work is calculated to reprove and admonish him.

In short, the Parent here represented, is a formal loose-living Christian, a Protestant Professor of Religion without the Practice of it; *but yet* he is a *Professor*, one that knows how to talk of Religion and makes a show to belong to it, but — alas for the rest! the Consequence will appear in the Book; in which I doubt a great many may see their own Picture drawn: May the Sight of it have the same healing convincing Efficacy as appears upon the Father here brought for an Example to them.

May they see it *and blush like him*: Like him may they *be asham'd of their Likeness*: May they see *and like him effectually reform the horrid Practice*. This would compleatly answer the End and Design of the Author of this Book, and rejoice the Heart of all serious Christians in the Nation.

The Child who is here made the Inquirer, has

Questi

Queſtions put into its Mouth but what are Natural, and Rational, and, I hope, conſiſtent with Principle, and as near as could be are ſuch as are proper even to a Child; none but what I wiſh every body would put ſeriouſly to themſelves as often as they look about them in the World, and none but what even a Child is capable to enquire into. I have endeavour'd to produce the Queſtions with *an Air of meer Nature*, Innocence and Childhood, *yet ſuch* as being naturally adapted to the general State of things may be appoſit and direct: *Such as* being the meer product of the moſt common Reaſonings, even of the Underſtandings of Children, that Underſtanding may juſtly be ſuppoſed to have dictated to them.

And as this *by a kind of Alluſion* hath its juſt Connexion with the Deſign of the Author, (*viz.*) To reprove Parents; ſo it is calculated for the Inſtruction of Youth, in their firſt Reflections, guiding them to inquire about themſelves, their *Original*, their *State*, their *Progreſſion* in this World, the reaſon of their *being born into it*, their paſſing *out of it*, and *which is the main Cogitation*, their Condition *beyond it*.

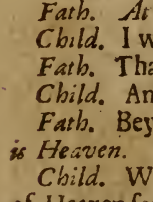
The Method *is New*, as is ſaid above, but perhaps may be more pleaſing: Any Thing, or any Method, if we may but bring the main End to paſs, (*viz.*) to bring Young or Old to ſet earneſtly and heartily about the great Work of ſerving, glorifying, and obeying the God that made them.

The Child is ſuppoſed to be come up to ſuch Years as to be thinking and inquiring, ſuppoſe about five or ſix Years old, and as Nature is always prompting the Soul to be ſearching after ſomething, which it did not know before, ſo that Inquiſitive Temper is *in ſome* ſedater than in others; however, our little Child asks but very little of his Father but what a

Child *at that Age* may be very capable of asking.

The Scene of this little Action is not laid very remote, or the Circumstance obscure; the Father walking out into a Field behind his Garden, finds one of his Children wandred out all alone, under a Row or Walk of Trees, sitting upon a little rising Ground, by it self, looking about, and mighty busie pointing this way, and that way, sometimes *up*, and sometimes *down*, and sometimes *to its self*, so that the Father coming unperceiv'd pretty near, found the little Creature very busie *about something* he could not tell what; when the Father, after much Observation, discovering himself, asks the Child what he was a doing, and so sits down by him, and begins the following Dialogue.

The *First Dialogue.*



I Was looking up there, *says the Child*, pointing up in the Air.

Fath. Well, and what did you point *thither* for, and then point *to the Ground*, and then to your self afterwards, what was that about?

Child. I was *a wondring*, Father.

Fath. At what, my Dear?

Child. I was a wondring what Place *that* is.

Fath. That is the *Air*, the *Sky*.

Child. And what is beyond that, *Father*.

Fath. Beyond! *my Dear*, why above it all, *there is Heaven.*

Child. Who lives there, *Father*: My Nurse talks of Heaven sometimes, and says *GOD* is in Heaven; *Is that the Place up there?*

Fath.

Fath. Yes, *my Dear.*

Child. Why *Father*, does God dwell there, sure it is a fine Place; how do we know that he dwells there; have you been there *Father?*

Fath. No, *my dear*, but we know it two ways, (1.) The Scripture tells us Heaven is his Throne, and that he has spoken from Heaven, and been seen come down from Heaven, and the *Son of God* was seen to ascend into Heaven: Besides, (2.) *Child*, he made Heaven for his Eternal Habitation, and the making of, and preserving all things, is a Token of his Being, and of his being *GOD.*

Child. But, *dear Father*, my Nurse tells me that God *made me too*, and that was it I was pointing to my self about; if God made me, how did I come from thence hither *Father?* I was a wondring, for 'tis a huge Way.

Fath. Child, GOD made you by the Course of Nature, he having made the whole World at first, and all the Things therein, he gave a Command and Power to Nature to grow and increase, and by Vertue of that Command every thing increases, and every Creature is produced by its own Kind; but at first all was made by *his infinite Power* who made all things.

Child. Why, *Father*, did God make all those Creatures we see about us, and this Grass, and the Trees, and these Cows and Horses, and the Dogs and Cats, and every thing?

Fath. Yes, my dear, He made Heaven and Earth, and the Sea, and all that in them is, as you read in your Commandments, Child.

Child. And what a Creature am I *Father*, I an't like them, I can speak, they can't speak *Father.*

Fath. No, Child, GOD has made you a rational Creature, and given you a Soul.

Child. A Soul Father, *WHAT IS THAT?*

Fath. It is a Part of his own Image ſtampt upon you, and the Breath of an Invincible Power, by which you can think of things to come, and remember things paſt, reflect and argue, and know both your ſelf, and Him that made you.

Child. Why, dear Father! cannot the Horſes and Cows do ſo too?

Fath. No, Child, not at all.

Child. Why, has he made me a better Creature than they?

Fath. Yes he has, and has given them to you for Food and Service; don't you ſee that we eat them, and ride upon them, and the like.

Child. I am glad I am made a better Creature than they, I'd thank him for it *if I knew how*; ſhould I not do ſo Father?

Fath. Indeed you ſhould, Child.

Child. But you never told me ſo before, *Father*, as I remember.

Fath. Not ſo often as I ſhould have done, my Child, but remember it now my Dear. [*and kiſſes him.*

Child. So I will. .... But how muſt I thank him for it, Father?

Fath. You muſt pray to him to bleſs you Child, and then give Thanks to him for your Creation and Preſervation.

Child. Do you do ſo *Father?*

Fath. Yes Child.

Child. O, ho, becauſe I never heard you do ſo *Father.*

Fath. Well, but you have been taught.

Child. Yes, my Mother and my Nurſe taught me to ſay my Prayers, but I don't ſee a Word there that thanks God for making me a Boy, and not a Horſe or a Cow, or giving me a Soul, *Father.*

Fath.

Fath. But it is included, *Child*, when in the beginning you say *Our Father* .... for God is a Father in giving you a Soul, as well as a Creator in making your Body.

Child. But may I not *say so* in my Prayers *then*?

Fath. Yes Child, if you were taught.

Child. Indeed I can say that without teaching; sure I can thank God for giving me a Soul, and making me better than the Cows, without my Nurse, I wish I had known it sooner *Father*; won't God be angry that I never thank'd him for it yet?

Fath. I hope not Child, since you did not know it.

Child. Dear *Father*, won't God be angry with you that you never told me before?

Fath. Indeed he has reason.

Child. Dear *Father*, why did you not tell me?

[*Here the Child weeps, and the Father blusht, or at least ought to have done.*

Fath. Well Child, do not cry, come take care you thank God for it, *now you do know it.*

Child. Indeed I'll thank him for it, for my Heart jumps within me, to think he has made me better than other Creatures.

Fath. My dear Child! [*The Father is mov'd with the Child's Expressions, and kisses him, weeping.*

Child. But, *dear Father*, if God should be angry with me for not thanking him, may he not take this Soul away again, and turn me into a Horse, or a Cow?

Fath. No Child, God does not punish that way, but he may take away the use of it, take away the Reason, or the Speech, or the Senses, and leave you in some Sence worse, than if you had no Soul at all; he may do all these things, and more.

Child.

Child. Then should not I, when I say my Prayers, remember to pray that God would not be angry *that I never thank'd him for it before*?

Fath. Your Nurse will teach you to do so.

Child. Indeed *Father* I'll do that, *whether my Nurse teaches me or no*; sure if God made me, I may pray to him not to be angry with me: If you was angry with me, *Father*, I don't want my Nurse to teach me to come and say, *My dear Father do not be angry*.... Besides, if God has made me so much better than other things, *won't he teach me* to thank him for it?

Fath. I hope he will Child.

Child. But, *dear Father*, wherefore has God made me better than other Creatures; had he not some reason for doing so?

Fath. No reason *Child* on thy side.

Child. But does not God expect then that I should do something that the Cows and Horses cannot do; is not there something for me to do for it?

Fath. Yes indeed there is Child.

Child. What is that Father? For I have been wondring what my Business is in the World, as well as how I came hither; what am I to do here?

Fath. You are to live here to the Glory of him that made you.

Child. How's that, *Father*?

Fath. You must fear God, and keep his Commandments.

Child. What the Ten Commandments, Father?

Fath. Yes, my Dear.

Child. Truly if God has made me, and made me *better than other of his Creatures*, and can take away from me, *as you said*, *Father*, all that he has given me, and make me worse than the Cows and Horses, sure I should fear him, and do what he commands me.

Fath.

Fath. That's true Child.

Child. But mayn't I do more than that, *mayn't I love him too*, Father, for sure he loves me, or else he would not have made me so, and given me all this?

Fath. Yes *Child*, you must love him too.

Child. But *Father*, that is not in my Commandments; won't God be angry with me if I should love him?

Fath. No, *Child*, to obey *God*, and to fear *God*, is to love *God*; for to fear him as your Father, and to serve him as your Father, is to fear and serve him as a Child, and that is to love him. . . . *Don't you love me Child?*

Child. Yes, *dear Father.*

Fath. Why do you do what I bid you; and why do you cry when I am angry with you?

Child. Because I love you, *dear Father.*

Fath. So if you fear God, and serve God, as your Father, and as his Child, that is loving him, for *they that love him keep his Commandments.*

Child. Indeed I think it need not be put into my Commandments; for sure when we know what he has done for us, to make us Souls, and not make us like the Horses and Cows, we must needs *love him.* . . Don't you love him, *Father?*

Fath. Yes, *my Dear.*

Child. And do not every body else love him *Father?*

Fath. No Child, a great many wicked Children, and wicked People don't love him.

Child. And has he given them Souls too, *Father*, and made them better than the Beasts, as he has done for me.

Fath. Yes Child.

Child. But *sure* they do not know it then.

Fath. They do not think of it *as thou dost*, my Dear.

Child.

Child. 'T may be *their Fathers* and *Mothers* never told them of it *Father*, as you do me now.

Fath. They don't *so much* as they should, nor *so soon* as they should.

Child. I wish you had told me of it sooner *Father.*

Fath. I hope 'tis not *too late now* Child.

Child. But, *Father*, if those wicked Children do not love God, nor thank God, for giving them Souls, and making them better Creatures than the Horses and Cows, is not God angry with them for it?

Fath. Yes, *my dear Child*, God is very angry with them.

Child. But why does he not take away their Souls again, and turn them into Horses and Cows, or take away the use of their Reason, and leave them worse than the Beasts, as you said he could do, *Father*? Sure God is not angry with them at all.

Fath. Yes, my Dear, God is angry with them for all that, but he lets them *go on* sometimes, till they mend and repent, and turn to God again, and then he forgives them; *other times* he lets them run on, and grow worse, and punishes them for all together at last.

Child. That's a sad thing *Father*; sure God is very angry when he lets them go on, and takes no Care of them, *Father*, is n't he?

Fath. Yes indeed, it is a sign of his severest Anger, when he lets them *go on* and does not punish them *till last*, for 'tis a Signal that he has no Thought of Mercy in Store for them.

Child. And when God leaves them so, are they not sorry for it, *Father?*

Fath. No, no, they always grow worse and worse, till they grow meer Reprobates, and hardned against him that made them.

Child.

Child. They are sad Folks indeed; but, *Father*, does not God destroy them at last?

Fath. He does *worse*, *Child*, he punishes them Everlastingly in Hell.

Child Dear *Father*, don't let me make God angry with me, as they do; won't you tell me what I must do to save me from God's being angry.

Fath. Yes *I will* Child.

Child. But you never did yet Father, I am afraid he is angry with me already, for I am almost six Years old, and never thank'd him, nor lov'd him, nor fear'd him, nor nothing *Father*; he has let me alone, and let me *go on*, just as you say he does the wicked Folks, I am sure he must be angry with me, and he will punish me Everlastingly, *in Hell*, as you said Father. *O what must I do!* [*Here Conviction works in the Child, the Child weeps.*

Fath. Why Child did you not do all this?

Child. Dear *Father*, I never knew *what God was*, or what he had done *for me*, you never told me a Word of him in all my Life *till now!* I never heard you pray to him *in all my Life!* I know nothing of him, how should I, *Father!*

Fath. But Child, your *Nurse* and your *Mother taught you* that *God made you.*

Child. *Yes*, but they never told me *what God was*, and what *he had done* for me, and what *I was to do again.* . . . I thought nothing not I, *Father*, I liv'd just as I *saw you live* Father! I never pray'd to God in all my Life *Father.*

Father. Why Child, did not your Mother teach you to say your Prayers every Night and Morning?

Child. Yes, *Father*, I said the Prayers over, but I never thought a word what they meant; I only said them by rote, sure God does not take notice of

of that, *does he*, Father! If he does, *our Parrot can pray* as well as I.

Fath. True, Child, God requires the Heart, and regards no Prayers but what the Heart joins in.

Child. You say, *I may* pray to God for what I want, and *I may* thank him for making me, and for making me better than the Horses and Cows.

Fath. Yes, I do say so.

Child. But Father, am I to do nothing else? Did God make me for nothing? Have I no other Business now I am made? What do other Folks do that are made as I am?

Fath. Yes Child, you were made *to serve him* - - - You know your *Catechise*.

Child. What's that, the Questions and Answers my Nurse tanght me?

Fath. Yes, the Questions and Answers: There you are told, your Business here is to serve God.

Child. Dear Father. did God make me to serve him?

Fath. Yes Child, he made you to serve him.

Child. And do you serve him Father? - - - What is it to serve him? How must I do it? I would fain serve him, because he has made me, and made me better than the Horses and Cows. [*Here the Father weeps, and speaking* to himself *with a Sigh, says, O Lord how this Child is made to sting my Soul to the quick*, God knows I have neither *served him*, nor taught these dear little Creatures to do it *as I should have done.*

The Father was so struck with the Child's Question, *viz.* [*Do you serve him Father?*] that he gives no present Answer, and the little inquisitive Creature goes on again.

Child.

Child. Dear *Father*, may not I be taught how to serve *God?*

Fath. Yes, *my Dear*, says the Father.

Child. Will you teach me, *Father?*

Fath. Yes Child.

Child. Why, you never did yet, Father, may be I be'n't big enough yet; when shall I be big enough *Father*, when I am a Man?

Fath. You may learn to *serve God* tho' you are a Child.

Child. Does my Brother know how to serve God, Father, *he is a great Boy*, and I never saw you teach him. - - - Can you teach me Father?

Fath. God will teach you himself, Child.

Child. Will God teach me himself! *How can that be?*

Fath. He has many ways of teaching *Child*, viz. by his Word, his Ministers, and his Spirit.

Child. What are they, *Father*, you said just now *you would teach me?*

Fath. I may teach you too, *Child*, but the Word of God is given to teach you, and Ministers are sent to instruct by that Word, and Parents are Ministers of God to instruct their Families and Children, and the Spirit of God is given to seal Instruction, and make it effectual.

Child. Do *the Fathers* teach their Children?

Fath. Yes, 'tis their Duty *to do so.*

Child. And be they Ministers to their Families?

Fath. So far as to instruct and teach their Children *they are*, my Dear.

Ch. And when will you be a Minister, *Father*, that I may be instructed how to serve God?

Fath. My Dear, I am so much a Minister at any time.

Child. I wonder!

Fath. What do you wonder at, *my Dear?*

Child.

Child. Dear Father, you say the Fathers are to teach their Children, and are Ministers to their Families, and you are a Minister, and *yet I was never taught*; I wonder what all this is, for I have never been taught any thing but to play, and sing the Song my Nurse teaches me, and read in my Sister's Song-Book.

Fath. Well, *my Dear*, you shall not want teaching.

Child. Will you teach me to serve God, *Father?*

Fath. Yes, *My dear.*

Child. I am glad of it, *I would fain serve God, Father*, for I * love him already *dearly.*

[* *Conviction of Sin thus working up to a love to God, a fear of God, and a desire of serving God*, which is Holiness, *may be very well allowed here to be an Appearance of converting Grace in the Heart of a little One.*

[The *Father* takes notice of it as such.]

Fath. That is a true Principle to begin to serve God from, *my dear*, for God accepts no Fear but what is founded in *our Love* to him; *pray then, my dear*, that he will increase your Love to him, that you may serve him acceptably.

Child. But, *dear Father*, you say God dwells up there in Heaven, how can he hear *what I say?* I cant speak loud enough to be heard so far; and then, tho' God could hear me, how does he know when I speak as my Heart means?

Fath. Yes Child, God can hear and know, for he is infinite.

Child. What's that Father?

Fath. Why, *Child*, it takes in all the Attributes of God.

Child.

Child. I don't know them hard Words, *Father*, pray who is God, and what is he, can't you tell me *Father*, so as I may understand it?

Fath. It is very hard to give a Description of God to thy Understanding, *my Dear.*

Child. And that is the reason you never said any thing of him to me, *Father*, is it not? Must not I know who God is *till I am a Man, Father*?

Fath. Yes Child, the Scripture says, *Remember thy Creator in the Days of thy Youth.*

Child. But *dear Father*, how shall I remember him, I never heard any thing of him, you never told me a Word of him yet, *may be I a'n't a Youth yet*; I long to be a Youth *Father*, then you'll tell me who God is, that I may remember him *Father*, wont you?

Fath. Dear Child! You ought to have been told who God is before now; *indeed I have neglected to instruct thee as I ought to have done*, but I'll tell thee now *my Dear.*

Child. I'n't it too late *Father?* O why would you neglect it *Father!* Was you angry with me, and would not Instruct me *Father*? What if God should let me *go on now*, and punish me Everlastingly, as you said? I wish you had not neglected it *Father.*

Fath. No Child it is not *too late*, as you shall know by and by.

Child. Tell me then *Father* what is God, I would fain know God, can't I see him, to be sure I should know him if I could see him.

Fath. No Child, you cannot see him, *no mortal Eye hath seen God at any time.*

Child. How shall I know then what he is?

Fath. You must know God by the Scripture, by reading, and by meditating on the Revelation he has given of Himself there; you must read of him in your Bible.

Child. But *Father*, I can't know him by reading my Book; I have read my Book often, but I know nothing about God; can't you tell me what God is, *Father?*

Fath. No Words can express his Being, or describe him.

Child. How shall I know then by reading *Father?*

Fath. I mean Child, no Words can express it *fully*, but the Spirit of God expounds the Word of God to us, and by that Spirit he teaches us the Knowledge of Himself.

Child. But you can tell me something of him *Father*, you say he dwells up there; what is he like *Father?*

Fath. God is one, infinite, eternal, incomprehensible, invisible *BEING*, the first Cause of all things; the Giver of Life and Being to all things; existing prior, and superior to all things, infinitely perfect, great, holy, just, wise, and good.

Child. These are all hard Words, *Father*, how shall I understand them; what do you mean by that word *INFINITE*, for I see you put that in among the rest over and over.

Fath. Why *Child*, *INFINITE* is a Word to signifie something beyond all that is known, and can only be described *in Thought*; and those Thoughts only describe it by acknowledging that they cannot describe it; but thus much you may understand by it: That

That God was *before* all things, and shall continue *after* them; that he had Power *to make* all things, and by the same Power *preserves* and *maintains* all things, and at last will put all things to an End: Of the Particulars *you may understand thus*; That he is infinitely *Great*, signifies, that he has made thee, *my Dear*, and all People in the World; that he is infinitely *Wise*, signifies that he knows every Thought in the Heart, and that implies, that he hears every Word that is spoken, and sees every Action that is done, tho' never so secret; that he is infinitely *Holy* and *Just*, signifies that he hates all that is Evil, and will punish it; that he is infinitely *Good*, signifies that he loves every good Action, and will reward it: That he is infinitely *Powerful*, signifies that all other Powers move and act by him; *for by him we live, and move, and have our Being.* Dost thou know him Child by this Description?

Child. I am wondring! *Father*, I don't say I know, *but I wonder!* I am afraid, I tremble! *Father*, sure God is very Dreadful!

Fath. He is so, Child.

Child. Does he never speak, *Father*, can't I hear him speak?

Fath. His Voice is terrible, and he is a consuming Fire; thou can'st not hear him speak, *my Dear.*

Child. My Nurse said, *Father*, that *when it thunder'd*, it was God spoke; what is the Thunder and Lightning, *Father*, *is that God?*

Fath. No, my Dear, it is the Work of God, *as all the rest of the Creation is his Work*, but no otherwise; the Voice of God is compared to

Thunder indeed, but God speaks to us in another kind of Voice *than that.*

Child. What Voice is that, *Father?*

Fath. The Voice of *the Gospel*, and the Voice of *his Creatures.*

Child. What is that *Father*, I never heard it; may I hear that Voice? I would fain hear God speak, *Father*, for I would do what he bids me, and never make him angry.

Fath. The *Gospel* is the Word of God, the Message of Life sent from Heaven, revealed in the Scriptures, and preached by his Servants the Ministers, this is the Voice I mean *Child.*

Child. I don't understand it *Father.*

Fath. Why, the Bible is the Word of God, it was dictated by the Inspiration of the Spirit of God; when you read the Bible, you are to believe that God speaks to you in the Words you read; *this is his Voice.*

Child. Why, does God speak to me when I read my Book, *Father?*

Fath. Yes, *my Dear.*

Child. But then, what if I do not understand it, then it is nothing to me; how shall I do to know what I read?

Fath. You should be taught, my Dear.

Child Who should teach me; won't God make me understand what he says when I read my Book?

Fath. Indeed I should have taught thee, my Dear, that is true. [*The Lord pardon me, I have too much neglected it*, says the Father aside, and turning away his Head cannot refrain Tears.

Child

Child. Dear Father tell me, what does my Book say? What shall I learn there of God?

Fath. You will learn that God is *from* the Beginning, and *to* the End; *from* Everlasting *to* Everlasting; has *created* all things. and *knows* all things.

Child. Knows all things! that's strange, *Father*, does God know all things?

Fath. Yes, my Dear.

Child. If God knows all things, he knows how old I am, and that all this while I *never* thought of him, nor served him, and *never* knew any thing of him *till now*, and he knows *Father*, you *never* told me any thing of him *before now*; sure he is very angry, and will punish me, what must I do? [*Here the Child weeps again.*

Fath. But God is Merciful too *Child.*

Child. What is that *Father?*

Fath. Why, to those that repent of their Sins past, and reform their Lives, he is Merciful; that is, upon their Repentance he forgives them for the sake of *Jesus Christ*, and is reconcil'd to them as though they had not sinned against him.

Child. Jesus Christ! Father, who is that?

Fath. He is God.

Child. Why *Father*, you said *God was one first Being*; is there more Gods than one, is there two Firsts? My Commandments say there is but one God.

Fath. No Child, there is but one God, yet *Jesus Christ* is essentially God, tho' in a second Person, he is God co-equal, co-eternal, that is, the same in Being, Nature, and Attributes, *God manifested in the flesh*, sent from Heaven to redeem a lost World.

Child. I don't understand a Word of all that, *Father*; what does it mean?

Fath. Why Child, you are to understand, that when the first Man and Woman in the World was created, God having made a Covenant or Agreement of Holiness and Life *with them* and *in them with all that should be born of them*, they broke that Covenant, and so involved all their Posterity in their Guilt, the Punishment of which was Eternal Death: But God, who, *as I told you Child*, was Infinitely Good, *tho' provok'd utterly to destroy the whole Race for that Sin, and being under the Engagement of that Covenant to do it*, yet in the meer Operation of his own Goodness, determin'd to recover a chosen Number of his Creatures from the Gulph of Death; and to make this adequate or suitable to his own infinite Justice and Holiness, he incarnated by a Miraculous Birth, the Divine Nature into the Humane, and caused this Blessed Conjunction to appear in the World in the likeness of Sinful Flesh; so being infinitely God on the one Hand, and Man on the other, he became capable of being a compleat Sacrifice for Satisfaction of God's Justice, and suffering the Divine Wrath, made Peace for us *by the Blood of his Cross*, was Crucified, Dead and Buried, as you say in your Creed, rose again, is ascended into Heaven, sits at the Right-hand of Power, and shall come again to Judge us all: And this, Child, is call'd our Savour, the Son of God, and is indeed God himself.

Child. I don't know how to understand all this *Father!*

Fath.

Fath. You must understand it gradually, *my Dear*, a little at a time; you can understand *this*, That we are all under a Sentence of Death for the First Man's Sin: *By one Man Sin entred into the World, and Death by Sin.* Rom. v. 12.

Child. That is a strange thing *Father*: What are we all condemn'd to suffer for that Man's Transgression?

Fath. The Scripture is plain in it, *by the Offence of One, Judgment came upon all Men to Condemnation*, Rom. v. 18.

Child. But *Father*, you said just now, God would be reconcil'd to me if I repented, and was sorry for my Sins.

Fath. Yes Child, I did so.

Child. But how can that be, when you say I shall be Condemn'd for another Man's Transgression?

Fath. It is very plain, that the Effect of that First Man's Sin is a corrupt Taint which we all bring into the World with us, and which we find upon our Nature, by which we find a Natural Propensity in us to do Evil, and no Natural Inclination to do Good; and this we are to mourn over, and lament, as the Fountain of Sin, from whence all our wicked Actions do proceed; and this is call'd *Indwelling Sin.*

Child. Have I this in me, *Father*?

Fath. Yes Child: Did you not say, How should you do this or that, for you were not taught? You can be a naughty Boy without teaching, *to sin is natural!* but you must be instructed and labour'd with to be a good Child. *To Will is present with me, but how to perform that*

which is good I know not: In me, that is, *in my flesh dwelleth no good thing*, Rom. vii. 18.

Child. What will become of me then *Father*, if I was Wicked when I was born?

Fath. This, my Dear, is that which I nam'd *Jesus Christ* for.

Child. Why, what will he do for me?

Fath. He will deliver thee from this Body of Death. *Who shall deliver me from the Body of this Death? I thank God, through, (or for) Jesus Christ our Lord*, Rom. vii. 24, 25.

Child. How can he do this?

Fath He has deliver'd us from the Curse of the Law by being made a Curse for us, and whereas we are not able to perform any thing, he hath fullfilled all Righteousness for us, if we believe in him, for being justified by Faith we have Peace with God; and so, as by the Disobedience of one Man many were made Sinners, so by the Obedience of one *Christ* shall many be made Righteous. *Rom.* 5. 19

Child But *Father*, will *Jesus Christ* answer for me for that first Transgression, and take away the Sentence you say I was under? For if he does not, I am undone; to be sure I can't do it my self.

Fath. Yes, my Dear, the Blood of Christ cleanseth from all Sin, as well of Nature as of Life; and *there is now no Condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus*, Rom. viii. 1.

Child And now we are all sav'd again by this New Saviour's Satisfaction, a'n't we *Father*?

Fa. No Child, not all! only a select Number chosen from Eternity by the meer Grace and Good-

Good-will of God, to which select Number, when they come into the World, God *of the same Grace* gives Repentance and Faith, sanctifies and justifies them, and then accepts them for the sake of the Saviour of the World.

Child. So there is none Saved but such as God has chosen again out of the rest?

Fath. We have no Warrant to say any other are Saved.

Child. But who are they then *Father*, don't you know their Names?

Fath. No Child, God has left that uncertain to us.

Child. But, *dear Father*, I would fain know if my Name be among them; for what will become of me if I *should not* be one of them!

Fath. I hope thou art, *Child*, God has not let us know who are shut out, but by their shutting out themselves.

Child. But is there no way to know, *Father?*

Fath. Why Child, it may be presumptively known by this, That since to all that God has thus Chosen, he by his Spirit gives Faith and Repentance, Sanctification in Heart, and Justification of Person: Whoever the Spirit of God worketh this Faith and Repentance in, have a very good Assurance that they are in the Number, *the Spirit witnessing with their Spirit that they are the Sons of God*, Rom. viii. 16.

Child. But how shall I know if I have *Faith* and *Repentance*; what are they *Father?* I never heard of them in my Life; you never told me a word of them before.

Fath.

Fath. *REPENTANCE* Child, is a ſence of, and ſincere ſorrow for Sin in all its Parts; *firſt*, for the Taint and Corruption of our Nature deſcended from the firſt Man, and occaſion'd by the firſt Sin, *as I told thee*, by which we are by Nature born Enemies to the bleſſed and holy God, and fill'd with Inclinations to offend him; and next, for our own actual Tranſgreſſions, which are the Fruit of that Original Enmity, and which we have committed againſt him, and this Sorrow muſt be always attended with ſincere Deſire of Pardon, and Sanctification, and earneſt Endeavours after Reformation and Amendment. And *FAITH*, Child, is a fiduſial, fillial Confidence in the Promiſes of God, and conſequently in God himſelf, thereby humbly realizing and appropriating to our ſelves the whole Purchaſe of the Death of *Jeſus Chriſt*, with a relying upon his Merits, reſting on him, and adhering to him for Life and Salvation.

Child. I ſhall never remember all this, *Father*, how did you come to remember it? Did *your Father* only tell it you as you do me, are there no Books that teach it me? *If not*, won't you write it down for me *Father*? You know I can read.

Fath. It is all written down already *Child*, and you have it every Word in your Bible.

Child. I do remember ſomething *Father* of *Adam* and *Eve* there; Were they the Folks that ſinned firſt, *Father*?

Fath. *Yes Child*, and ha'n't you read of *Jeſus Chriſt*?

Child.

Child. Yes Father, but I do not understand a Word of him, no body ever taught me; besides I have heard my Brother cry, *O Jesus!* and *O Christ!* at his Play, and Nurse chid him for it, and said it was a naughty Word.

Fath. Your Brother is a naughty Boy, and should be whipt when he uses those Words.

Child. Who should whip him *Father*? you don't.

Fath. But *I shall*, if I hear him say so again.

Child. But why, *Father*, if *Jesus Christ* be God, how is it a naughty Word?

Fath. It is a naughty prophane thing to name his Name on slight Occasions; that Name should only be named with Fear and Reverence, and on a serious Occasion, as we use it now, *my Dear*; your Commandments say, you must not take the Lord's Name *in vain*, that is, upon common Occasions, such as Passion, Play, Imprecation, prophane Cursing, Swearing, and the like.

Child. But who is this *Jesus Christ*, Father? I have never heard any thing of him before but only his Name.

Fath. He is *GOD manifested in the Flesh*, and the *Son of God* sent down from Heaven *to die for Sinners*, and to save us from *Eternal Death.* *

[* *Here the Child is silent, and Tears fall from its Eyes.*

Fath. Don't cry, *my Dear*, why dost cry?

Child. I must cry, *dear Father*, there is something bids me cry, I cannot tell what you say at all, Father, *but my Heart beats*, I am frighted, die for Sinners! Jesus Christ God! God, and yet die! and die for Sinners! what is all this! Am I a Sinner?

Fath.

Fath. Yes, *my Dear*, all of us are Sinners.

Child. What, and did *GOD* die for me! Jesus Christ *DIE for me!* [*The Child trembles and cries, the Father weeps too, and kisses it, moved to see the* Spirit of God *so visibly working in the Heart of the little Creature.*

Fath. Yes, *my Dear*, and will Save thee *I hope*, for he is thy Redeemer.

Child. Then God is not angry with me for my Fault in not knowing him sooner?

Fath. No, *my Dear*, he is reconcil'd by Jesus Christ, who *died to bring thee to God*, and make Peace for thee *by the Blood of his Cross*, and procure Pardon for all thy Faults.

Child. How does he do it?

Fath. He gives Repentance and Remission! Have you not read in your Bible of Repentance, *my Dear?*

Child. I don't know, I believe I have, *but no body told me any thing what it is*, and I do not remember *Father*: Is all that in my Book?

Fath. Yes, *my dear*, I will shew it thee there, and explain it to thee, thou shalt not want teachin any longer, if thou wilt but learn.

Child. Indeed I'll learn it *Father* with all my Heart; shall I know what God is, and what Jesus Christ is, if I learn my Book, *Father?*

Fath. Yes Child, all that I have told thee, and a great deal more is there, my Dear, and you must read the Bible, and there you will learn it all.

Child. Did you learn it all there *Father?*

Fath. Yes, my Dear.

Child

Child. But did *your Father* never shew you where to find it, and tell you what it meant? For I have read a deal in that Book, *Father*, but I never knew what it meant, and *you never shew'd it me, Father* ! You know it was not my Fault, *dear Father*, was it ? You know I am but a Child.

Fath. That's true *Child*, you will understand it better when you are a Man.

Child. But Father ! Could not I understand it now, if I were shew'd ? I begin to understand a great deal of what you say, that I am born with a Wicked Heart, and that if I am not one of those that are chosen to be Saved, *GOD* who is angry with all Sinners, will Judge me at last, and punish me Everlastingly ; and Father, I understand now *by what you said before*, that God has been very good to me, and has made me a better Creature than the Horses and the Cows, and given me a Soul *Father*, and all this makes me love him ; and you say it is lawful for me to *love him*, and I am sorry I have not loved him *before*, and afraid he should be angry with me that I have not thanked him before, for what he did for me, and would ask him Forgiveness, *if I knew how :* Now *Father*, you say this Faith and Repentance is to be learnt out of this Book, but should I not have somebody to *teach me* the Meaning of it? And may I not be taught the Meaning of it *Father* though I be not a Man ? What if I should die, and *never be a Man*, what will become of me then *Father ?* Dear Father, won't you teach me the Meaning of this Book before I am a Man ?

Fath.

Fath. Yes Child, I will teach it thee now as far as I can, but you must read your Bible too, *my Dear.*

Child. What is this Book *Father,* that I call my Bible; *who made it?*

Fath. It is the Word of *God,* written by himself.

Child. What did *God* print it for us himself, *Father?*

Fath. No Child, God did not print it, or write it on the Paper, that is not the Case; it was first written by Holy Men of God, but it was dictated to them by the immediate Inspiration of the Holy Ghost.

Child. The *Holy Ghost!* Father, *What is that?*

Fath. Why that is God.

Child. Dear *Father,* you said first there was but *one God,* then you said *Jesus Christ* was *GOD,* now you say the *Holy Ghost* is *GOD*; are there three *Gods?* I remember my Commandment says, *Thou shalt have none other God but me.*

Fath. No Child, there are not *three Gods,* GOD is but one infinite and undivided Being, but the *Godhead* is received and understood by us in Three Persons, the *Father,* the *Son,* and the *Spirit,* and these Three are *one God,* the Maker and Judge of all.

Child. I wonder!

Fath. What do you wonder at *Child?*

Child. When you speak of GOD, I can do nothing but wonder! I cannot think of GOD! He is a great something, from whom I am, and for whom I am, and to whom I am; but I can't tell what God is, *I wonder!*

Fath.

Fath. He is incomprehensible, Child, *you cannot by searching find out* God: But in this Book, *the Bible*, you may learn enough to save you, and bring you to him.

Child. May I Father! Then I'll get it all without-Book.

Fath. It is not so much the getting the Words by Heart, *Child*, as getting *the Word of Life* wrought in your Heart.

Child. How is that, Father?

Fath. Why, *Child*, to have the Spirit of God which wrote that Word, print it upon your Mind, and give you Understanding both to read and obey it.

Child. And will he do that for me, Father? then I shall not want you to teach me: But how if he won't teach me, Father?

Fath. You must pray to God to open you Understanding, and give you the teaching of his Spirit; for he has promis'd in his Word, *that he will give his Spirit to those that ask it.*

Child. Has he promis'd that! then I'll read the Bible every Day, shan't I *Father?*

Fath. Yes Child, by all means.

Child. And every time I open the Book, should I not pray for the Teaching of his Spirit, to instruct me?

Fath. Yes *Child*, and to guide and keep you in his Way.

Child. Why, can the Spirit do that too?

Fath. Do that Child! *the Spirit of God is* GOD, and therefore can do all things, but it's the peculiar Work of the Spirit in this case; the Spirit is your Sanctifier; it is the Light of your Paths;

it

it works Faith, and gives Repentance; it puts every good thing into you, and works every good Work for you; it gives a saving Efficacy to every Ordinance; it brings you to Christ, to rely on him for Salvation, and he brings you to *God the Father*, whose Acceptance *in Christ*, is your Life.

Child. And will this Spirit be had by praying to God *for it?*

Fath. Yes, Child, for you cannot pray to God in Faith without the help of the Spirit; and when the Spirit works in you a Disposition to pray, it cannot but answer its own Image, and the Breathings of the Soul, which its self has created; for *the longing Soul shall be satisfied.*

Child. But, *Father*, you say the Spirit of God has given the Word, which you say is the Bible, for my teaching, and yet you say the Spirit teaches; what, do they both teach the same thing?

Fath. Child, the Bible is your Rule of Life, tho' the Spirit is the secret Instructor; the Scripture is the Key of Instruction; there you are to learn how *God* is to be worshipped; how to order your Conversation aright; how to perform your Duty, and *what it is the Lord thy God requires of thee:* There you have an Historical Account of the whole World, of its Creation, the Fall, the first Condemnation of it, to a general Deluge; typical of the great Deluge of God's Wrath, which shall drown all Ungodly Men for ever: There you have the History of God's Church from the Beginning to the Fullness of Time, and the fullfilling Old-Testament Types, and Old-Testament Promises; there you have the

the History of our Saviour, of his Miraculous Conception and Birth, holy Life, wondrous Doctrine, stupendious Miracles, his Death, Passion, Resurrection, and glorious Ascension: There you have an Account of the first Mission of the *Holy Ghost*, and at last the whole Doctrine of the Gospel of Truth, founded upon the Redemption purchased by Christ: There you have the whole Mystery of Godliness unfolded; the great *Wonder of Wonders!* the Immortal to die! and the Eternal to begin! the great Destruction of Sin, the Condemnation of the Devil, and the Salvation of the World.

All this is to be seen in the Bible; which being *the Word of God*, you are to read it with Reverence, regard it with Faith, as the Word of God, and obey it, as your Rule.

Child. And to pray for the Spirit to help me to do so, *must I not, Father?* For you told me I could not believe or understand it without the Spirit to assist me.

Fath. That is true, *Child.*

Child. But, *Father*, are you sure that the Bible is the Word of God?

Fath. Yes, Child, very sure of it.

Child. And the Spirit of God can only teach us to understand it?

Fath. Yes, Child.

Child. Why, don't the Minister understand it, and teach Folks to understand it; what do they go to Church for?

Fath. The Ministers are call'd *Ministers of the Word*, that is, Expounders of the Scriptures, and the preaching of the Gospel is one of the ordi-

nary Means, as the reading the Word is another, by which the Blessed *Spirit of God* instructs the Hearts of his People, and turns them to himself; reading the Word written, *that is the Bible*, and hearing the Word preached, that is, the Sermons at Church, are the *common* Methods appointed, by which the Knowledge of God is conveyed to us.

Child. Then I must go to Church and hear the Minister preach, as well as read the Bible?

Fath. Yes, Child.

Child. Why, *Father*, my Mother has carried me to Church a great many times, but I thought I was carried there only to show my new Coat, and my *fine Hat*, I don't know what the Man said when I went.

Fath. But you were a naughty Boy then, you should have minded what he said, you were not carried there to shew your fine Cloaths.

Child. Why *Father*, I thought so; for when it Rain'd, and I could not wear my best Cloaths, my Mother would not let me go out; or when the Wind blow'd the Powder out of my Hair, my Mother would not let me go; and I heard you say, Father, *last Sunday*, that you could not go to Church, *because* the Barber had not brought your new Perriwig home; and *another Sunday*, for want of a pair of Gloves you staid at Home and play'd with me all Sunday long, or lay down on the Couch to sleep: I thought, Father, I had gone thither for nothing but *to show my fine Cloaths.*

Fath. No Child, there is other Work to be done there.

Child

Child. What, Father? to remember what fine Cloaths other Folks have on, *is not that it?* I know my Sisters go to Church, and they do nothing but look about them, to see how every body is dress'd, and when they come home, my Mother and they, *you know Father*, take up the whole Night in telling one another what every body had on, and they do it so well, I wondred *Father*; and I thought I'd try if I could do so too, but I could not remember half of it.

Fath. They might have been better employ'd, my Dear.

Child What my Mother! Indeed Father I thought it had been all they went for; and I could not think any thing else, you know, *when my Mother did so too*; I am sure my Mother would not have done so, if it had not been good, *for 'tis my dear Mother*, and I love her dearly, and I am sure she would not do a naughty thing.

[*O see here the Mischief of evil Examples in Parents!*

Fath. Well Child, thou wilt know better in time; the Business of going to Church *is quite of another Nature*, it is to hear the Word of God expounded and preach'd, and it is *Hearing for thy Life!* It is a Duty in the Ministers to Preach, they were first sent by our Saviour himself, who appointed Apostles and Prophets for the Work of the Ministry, and gave them their Errand in his Command, *Go preach the Gospel to every Creature*; and it is a Duty *in us all* to hear, and to hear diligently, and not to forsake assembling our selves together.

Child. Why, *Father*, you seldom go your self it is only for little Boys to learn, *is it?*

Fath. No Child, it is every one's Duty to hear the Word preach'd, and to mix it with Faith in the hearing.

Child. Then you will let me go to Church *won't you, Father?* For sometimes my Mother won't let me go to Church, if it be but a little ill Weather, and if a little Wind does but blow and if God requires me to go, and my Mother won't let me, *what must I do?* Won't God be angry with me for not going to hear his Word preach'd?

Fath. If your Mother won't let you go, *the Child*, it is none of your Fault.

Child. But will not God be angry with my Mother, *dear Father*, for not letting of me go *that is all one?*

Fath. Well Child, be not troubled at that thou shalt go to Church every Day, and not be hinder'd.

Come *Child*, thou wilt catch cold to be so long out, let us go in to your Mother.

THE Father, as may be well imagined, warm'd with the various Thoughts that occurr'd to him upon this surprizing Discourse, was willing to get the Child away, that he might give Vent to his own Mind; and bringing the Child in, *walk out* again, till he was gotten to a Retirement, and then breaks out in a most passionate manner upon himself

himself, giving full Vent to his Convictions in such a Manner as this:

" What an ungrateful Creature have I been
" to the Goodness and Bounty of God! That
" Goodness and Bounty which has given me so
" much Advantage, and so many Ways to glori-
" fie him, and honour him in the World, and
" to whom I owe my Life, my Being, and *Well-*
" *being* in the World! And how has God re-
" proved me in this little dear Creature!

" *Wretch that I am!* how have I liv'd *as with-*
" *out God in the World!* and in my Family! that
" I have not so much as told my Children *who*
" *made them*, or let them know or guess by my
" Behaviour that there is such a thing *as a God* in
" the World, or that any Worship is due to a
" Sovereign Almighty Being! How has this little
" Lamb complain'd to me! that *he has never heard*
" *me pray to God in all his Life!* and it is but too
" true! How did it reproach me when I spoke
" to it of *Jesus Christ*! To hear the little Crea-
" ture say, *Who is that, Father!* And of the
" *Holy Ghost*, *Who is that, Father*! And of serv-
" ing God, *Do you serve him, Father*!

" What a Life have I led! Good Lord, what
" have I been doing! How shall I account to thee
" for the Souls committed to my Charge! That
" I should have the Blessing of Children given
" *to me*, and my Children have the Curse of a
" Prayerless, uninstructing Father *to them!*

Tears followed the Parent's Speech, and he prays earnestly to God to forgive him the Neglect and Omission of his Duty to his Children and Family, and enters into a secret Engagement between *God* and *his own Soul*, that for the future he will set up the due and daily Worship of God in his Family, and will diligently and carefully instruct his Children, teaching them the Knowledge of God, and how to serve him, and walk in his Ways.

After some Composure of Mind upon this Resolution, a new Trouble breaks in upon him; he had *elder Children* than this, and he had liv'd in a continual Neglect of his Duty, either in teaching them the Knowledge of God, or shewing them a Religious Example: These Children had contracted a prophane Habit both in Words, Manners, and constant Practice; had little Inclination to Religion, less Knowledge and *no Thoughts at all* about their Souls, and began to be *too Old*, and *too B g* to be wrought upon by Instruction or Perswasion, much less by Violence and Correction.

When this Reflection came upon the Parent's Thoughts after the Convictions he had met with from the little Enquirer aforesaid, this brought a second Flood of Tears from him, and he breaks out *thus:*

"Lord what will become of my poor wretched "Family! my other Children! my uninstructed "unreproved Children! What an Instrument "have

" have I been in the Ruin of their Souls! How
" does it all lie upon me as a Weight never to be
" remov'd; they are grown up, yet they know
" nothing of God, but to take his Name in
" vain! They neither call upon him, nor have I
" taught them to do so! If this poor Lamb re-
" proaches me with having never pray'd with it,
" or for it; *and too true it is, God knows!* What
" may these say to me, that have let them go on
" thus far in a loose, prophane, ignorant, irreligi-
" ous Life, and have neither reprov'd or instruct-
" ed them either by Word or Example, pray'd
" with them, or taught them to pray for them-
" selves! Merciful God! why have I not been
" removed, and in Mercy to them as well as in
" Judgment to my self, been snatch'd from them,
" that some other Person might have been set
" over them more for the good of their Souls.

Upon these Convictions, *the Man prays earnestly* to the Lord to pardon the heinous Offence of his neglecting his Duty to his Children; that God would supply by the teaching of his Blessed Spirit, that great want of Family-Instruction in his Children which he has been the Cause of; that he would work Convictions upon them, and would continue to stir him up to his Duty in the future directing, teaching, and governing his Family.

But what a hard Task he has with his other Children, and how difficult a Work it is to bring Children to a Sence of God and Religion after their green and tender Years are past, in which they are moulded *like Wax to a Seal*, to

receive such first Impressions as the Persuasion and Example of Parents are apt to make, *will be apparent in the following Dialogues.*

End of the First Dialogue.

Notes *on the First Dialogue.*

THE observing Reader will see here, that the Author to observe here a just Equality between all Opinions, and in order to make this Work generally useful and acceptable to all Denominations of Christians, and to all among them who seriously apply themselves to the great Business of their Eternal Salvation, has kept himself in the Answers to this little Child's Enquiry, to the plain general Principles of the Christian Religion, wherein he has neither prescribed himself in Method or in Words to the Catechisms of either the Church of *England*, the Assembly's Catechism, or any other, but laid down the Principles of Religion consonant to them all, as plainly as possible, as they are deduc'd from the Holy Scriptures, and as they agree with the several Confessions of Faith and Doctrinal Articles as well of the Church of *England*, as of all the Protestant Churches and Congregations in *Europe*, who profess the same Faith, believe the same

same God, and hope for Eternal Life thro' Faith in the same ever Blessed Intercessor and Redeemer.

If any particular Christian's Opinion may carry them further, or not so far *as* the Author has expres'd himself here in the Doctrines of Original Sin, Election of Grace, Repentance, and Faith in Christ, he prays, that while they can allow what is laid down here to be Orthodox in the Substance, they will extend the same Charity to his Design, as he does to their Opinion, (*viz.*) To leave room for further Explanations, to judge the best, and to consider that as this Part is spoken to a Child, and is for Children to read for their Instruction, it requires to be plain and concise, and *so be it* that it be essentially right; the more adapted it is to the meanest Understandings, the better it answers the Design of this Undertaking.

Some may think the Child here is brought in too often falling upon the Father with a Charge of not instructing him, and not praying with him, and not telling him these things sooner; but to such it may be sufficient to say, that as this is one of the great Designs of this Work, and is not spoken directly to in any other Part, it requir'd to be more than ordinarily pointed out here, especially because that upon these little Reprehensions of this Infant, are grounded the several most considerable Parts of the Dialogues which follow in the first Part: As particularly, the Convictions wrought by it upon the Father, mention'd at the end of the Dialogue, where he is brought in retiring himself to give Vent to his

his Soul, in reflecting on the breach of his Duty, and in Prayer to God; also the concurring Convictions wrought by the same Method, and by the same Instrument, upon the Mother, as in the second Dialogue, and more especially the Resolution of both to reform themselves, and to do their Duties more effectually in their Families.

These appearing, as I observe, to be the main Design of this first Part, and indeed something of this running thro' the whole Course of the Work, it could not but be needful to let those little sharp Reproofs innocently expres'd by the little Child in the first Dialogue, be often repeated, especially where the Sence brought them in with a kind of natural, unconstrain'd Innocence in the Expression, as is generally carefully ordered whereever those Reproofs are to be met with: Nor indeed could the Expressions of the Parents, either in their private Ejaculations, or mutual conversing upon that Part one with another, have been consonant to the rest of the Work, or the cadence of things preserv'd, if this had not been laid as a Foundation.

These Notes are not design'd to talk over again the whole Subject of every Discourse, if the Parts deserve any Comment, every considering Christian will make it to themselves as they go, but where the Case is particular, a Word may be said, which in the Dialogues would have been digressing too long, and have made it tedious.

From the Enquiries of the Child may be observ'd, how naturally the Connexion of Gospel-Truths, one with another, appears, I mean those essential to our Salvation: How bright a Chain,

and

and how closely hanging one upon another in a Climax that cannot but be admirable to observe, is the great Mystery of Man's Fall and Recovery, Sin entring into the World, Death by Sin, Nature corrupted by the Fall, sanctified by redeeming Grace; *by the Offence of one Man many made Sinners*; *by the Obedience of One many made Righteous*; Justice offended by Sin, eternal Death denounc'd as the Punishment; Justice satisfied by a Redeemer, Eternal Life the Consequence; *No Condemnation to them who are in Christ*: These things lie so plain, so natural, and in so exact an Order, that Nature seems to direct the Child, who knows nothing of them, to force them from the Father, by the Power of the most innocent uninstructed Enquiries.

How unaccountably to blame are those Parents who let their Children know nothing of these things till their own little, innocent Enquiries extort it from them!

How naturally does the Discourse of this little Child reprove Parents Neglect of the Sabbath Day's Work, (*viz.*) of attending the publick Worship of God; and how could the Child but suppose that going to Church was only for Children to learn, since his Father very seldom went himself, and stay'd at Home upon the most frivolous Occasions.

The Child's Discourse about going to Church only to show his fine Cloaths, and his Mother and Sister's being chiefly employ'd there to observe the Fashions and Dresses of their Neighbours, with the Conversation they have of those things after they come home, needs no Enlargements

ments here, the Consciences of most young People in our own Families will teach them to apply that Part to themselves; and the Author is content to leave it out if it is not generally acknowledg'd to be a needful Reproof. The Child is brought in here several times saying to his Father, when he speaks of serving, loving, and praying to God, *Do you do so, Father?* This puts me in Mind of a Story not improper to be related: A wicked Boy that had been addicted to Swearing and Cursing, was reproved by his Father with more Seriousness than usual, and his Father told him, that God heard him: The Father, it seems, was a Man of no Religion, or at least, very ill Morals himself; but what he happen'd to say to the Boy, struck him so deeply, that it was a means of Conviction to the Child; but Ignorance having been the Boy's greatest Unhappiness, when he came to consider of what his Father had said, he asks one of the Family whether God could see as well as hear; when he was answer'd, yes, That God was Infinite, and could hear and see all things: He told them he could not believe it; *for my Father was Drunk last Night*, says he, *sure he would not be Drunk if God could see him*, else *why did he tell me I should not Swear, because God could hear me?*

If Parents knew, or at least consider'd, the Influence their evil Examples have upon their Children, and how fatal an Encouragement to Sin it is to any Children to be able to say, *My Father does so himself*, the Presence of their Children would be a greater Restraint to Conscientious

scientious Parents, *even in things in themselves indifferent*, *much more in things really sinful*, than it is possible the Presence and Awe of the Parent can be to the Children: It is enough that Religious Parents have to struggle with in the perverse and wicked Inclinations of their Children; but they will find, those Liberties their Children take from the Encouragement of their Parents Example will be ten times more difficult to restrain *afterwards*, than those they have from their own Inclination, or the Example of others: It ennervates all the Exhortations of a Father; takes the Edge off from their Reprehension; makes their Resentment seem unjust and unreasonable, and makes the Child rather apt to retort the Practice of the Parent upon themselves, than receive patiently and meekly the Admonition.

I humbly recommend this Thought to those Parents who indulge themselves in any Vanities or Excesses, such as in Passion, in hasty Expressions, in Expences, in waste of Time, in ill Words, in Gaming, nay, or any of those things *which the World are apt to call Lawful and Innocent*: If such things *must* be indulg'd, and *you will* allow your selves in them, upon a Presumption that *you* can do them Innocently; at least then, conceal them from your Children, lest what you can use with Moderation, they fall into with Excess, and justifie the Practice from your Example.

It

It will be a very uncomfortable Reflection; and will fill the Mind with bitter Reproaches if ever God pleases to try such Parents, when they shall see the Introduction to their Children's Ruin form'd and begun in their [*the Parents*] Example; nor will it be any aleviation to their Sorrow, to say, I us'd those Diversions moderately, and kept my self within Compass; it was but very seldom that I us'd an ill Word; I play'd at Cards but very moderately, and never for much Money; I seldom drank hard, and the like. Our Moderation in Diversions shall introduce our Children's Excess; and if the Apostle, rather than offend a weak Brother, would wholly abstain even from part of his Necessary Sustenance, (*viz.*) *eating of Flesh*; how much more should Parents refrain their Excesses, nay, even their lawful Diversions, rather than lay a Foundation of the Ruin of their Children, and prompt them to Sin, by giving them a Pretence from, or Encouragement by their Father's Example.

From the whole of this Dialogue, Parents may see, besides their Duty to God, what they owe to their Children, in timely and early Instructing them; how much Instructing our Children is a Debt to them; and how Unjust and Injurious we are to our Children in omitting to Instruct them. What moving Expressions of the Child to the Father are these: *Dear Father*, says the Child, *why would you not tell me of it before?* Was you angry with me, Father?

And

And what if it ſhould be too late now! Will not God puniſh me Everlaſtingly now becauſe I have not known this ſooner! How cutting muſt it be to a Parent that has any Sence of Eternity, to think that his dear Child ſhould be loſt by his Omiſſion.

Theſe and many other Obſervations might be made here from the Particulars of this firſt Dialogue, but it is hop'd the reading the Dialogue its ſelf will cauſe many of them to occur; and the Brevity of this Work admits not our Notes to be too long.

The Second

DIALOGUE.

THIS Dialogue begins upon the following Occasion: The next Day after the former Discourse *with the Father*, the Child was carried to Church, and the Minister happen'd to be preaching upon the Death of our Saviour; his Text was, *God so loved the World that he gave his only begotten Son*, &c. And the Minister giving some Historical Account of the Death and Sufferings of Christ, and making some practical Improvements of it in his Discourse, the Child, when he came home, was found crying in a Room by its self, and the Mother being call'd, begins the Dialogue thus:

Moth. CHild! What dost cry for?

After some Difficulty *the Child answers*, the Minister made him cry.

Moth. How so! why what did he say?

Child He said that *God was dead.*

Moth. Chila, he did not say any such thing, you have forgot what he said.

Child.

Child. No I han't Mother, I am sure he said *Jesus Christ* was dead, and my Father told me Yesterday that *Jesus Christ* was *GOD*.

Moth. But Child, *Jesus Christ* is risen again.

Child. I know that, he said so too; but he was dead first, and the wicked *Jews* kill'd him; sure they were sad Folks Mother, why did they kill him?

Moth. You will read it in your Bible, my Dear.

Child. But Mother, the Minister says he died for us, and my Father said he died for me; did the *Jews* kill him for me, *Mother?*

Moth. He died for thee, *my Dear*, and me, and every body else that believes in him.

Child. Why did he die for me, *Mother*? I don't know what you mean; tell me *dear Mother*, did I make him die?

Moth. My dear, he died to save his People from their Sins, and I hope thou art one of them.

Child. Why Mother, *have I any Sins*? What are they, Mother?

Moth. We are all Sinners *Child*, Sin is offending God in Thought, Word and Deed, at which he is angry.

Child. When I do a Fault, is God angry for that? *Is that Sin*, Mother?

Moth. Every Fault you do, *my Dear*, is not a Sin against God.

Child. When did I make God angry then?

Moth. When you break any of God's Commandments, *then* you sin against *GOD*; as when you take God's Name in vain; when you disobey your Father and Mother, *and the like*; these are Sins against God, and these he is angry at.

Child. I never take God's Name in vain, *Mother*, nor never disobey you, Mother; I love you dearly, and do every thing you bid me, don't I, dear Mother?

Moth. Well, *my dear*, and I hope God is not angry with thee; be a good Boy then, I am not angry with thee, my Dear [*Hither the Mother speaks coldly, and makes slight of the thing; and having no other View at first than only quieting the Child, was for going away, at which the Child cries again.*

Moth. Why dost cry, *my dear*? I tell thee I am not angry with thee, do not cry.

Child. God may be angry with me for all that.

Moth. No, no, God is not angry with thee, do not cry, my Dear. [*Still the Mother is insensible of the Work of God in the Heart of the Child, and takes all this for common Talk, but she soon sees with other Eyes.*

Child. Why Mother, will God never be angry with me but when you are angry? I am afraid God is angry with me tho' you kiss me, and be Friends with me, and love me.

Moth Why *so, my Dear?*

Child. Why, *dear Mother*, my Father told me Yesterday, that God has done a great many things *for me*, and given me a great many *good things*, and I never thank'd him, nor lov'd him for it *yet*, nor serv'd him, nor pray'd to him *yet*; and is not God angry with me then?

[*The Child weeps.*

Moth.

Moth. That is very true, *my Dear*, but I hope God is not angry; do not cry, *my Dear*.

Child. But should not I have thank'd God for all that? Is it not a Fault, *Mother*?

Moth. Yes, *my Dear*, you should have thank'd him, pray'd to him, and praised him.

Child. But how should I have done it, Mother? I did not know, and * *you never told me*, and my Father never told me, nor shew'd me how; will God be angry that I did not thank him, when *I could not tell how to do it*?

[* *The Mother was but cold and indifferent all this time*, but now *she found herself TOUCH'D, and was confounded with the Child's Discourse, and taking the Child in her Arms, she kiss'd it, and wept, but could not speak to it a great while; at last she said with great Tenderness.*

Moth. My dear Child, It is not thy Fault, it is our Fault; it is my Fault, and it is thy Father's Fault we have not shown thee, nor taught thee, nor given any good Example to thee how thou should'st thank God, or serve or know God!

Child. Yes, my Father did it last Night.

Moth. Alass poor Child! thy Father, and I too should have done it many Nights and Years ago; more Shame for us that we have neglected it till thou should'st reprove us for it thy self.

Child. But, my Father said it was not too late now, *Mother.*

Moth. I pray God it be not, but that's no Thanks to us, *my Dear*; thou may'st have Cause to blame us || to thy dying Day.

Child. But is it *too late* for me then, *Mother?*

|| *Here the Mother finds the Heart of the Child is touch'd,* and *it immediately enter'd into her Thoughts that she might be made a Temptation to the Child to despair, and cast off Conviction, this allarms the Mother on the other Hand,* and therefore she adds,

Moth. No, my Dear, *God forbid!* the Sin has been ours, not thine; but it is *never* too late to pray to God.

Child. What must I do when I pray to *God?*

Moth. You must confess your Sins to him, pray to him to forgive your Sins, to bless you and sanctifie you, and preserve you; you must pray to him to give you your daily Bread, and keep you from all Evil; you must give Thanks to him for all his Mercies, and all the good things he has done for you.

Child. Must I thank God when I pray! *Mother,* How can I do so? Is that praying?

Moth. Yes, *my dear,* praising God for Mercies receiv'd is part of the Duty of Prayer, as well as seeking to him for Mercies we want; for so God has commanded, *in every thing by Prayer and Supplication, WITH THANKSGIVING making our Requests known unto God.*

Child. But if I have made God angry, *how can I ask him forgiveness?* Will God forgive me?

Moth.

Moth. Yes, *my dear*, he will forgive thee, he is a Merciful God, *it is his Nature and Property ever to have Mercy, and to forgive.*

Child. How do you know it? *Are you sure*, Mother, *that God will* forgive me my Fault, if I ask him Forgiveneſs?

Moth. He has promiſed to do ſo, *my dear.*

Child. How Mother? I never heard him ſpeak, Did he tell you ſo, *Mother*?

Moth. My dear, he has promiſed in his Word, it is in your Bible, which is the Word of God.

Child. O I am glad if it is there; *my Father told me* that God ſpeaks to me, and I hear him ſpeak when I read my Book; ſhow it me there, Mother.

Moth. There it is, *my Dear.* [Here the Mother ſhows the Child the ſeveral Texts following; *Whoſo confeſſes and forſakes, ſhall find Mercy; if we confeſs and forſake our Sins, he is juſt and faithful to forgive us our Sins. The Blood of Chriſt cleanſeth from all Iniquity.*

Child. The Blood of Chriſt, *Mother*, what is that? [*Interrupting her.*]

Moth. Why, my Dear, this is that the Miniſter made thee cry about; *Jeſus Chriſt* is that great Saviour, which the Miniſter told thee ſhed his Blood for our Sins, Died, and was Crucified to ſave a Loſt World.

Child. But, *dear Mother*, my Father told me, Chriſt was God; *can God die*?

Moth. My Child, *Chriſt* was God Eternal, one with the Father; but *Chriſt* to fullfil the

great Purpose of Man's Redemption, according to the Eternal Council of God, before the World began, in the fullness of Time, *became Man*, took upon him *not the Nature of Angels, but of the Seed of* Abraham; and this he did that he might be *God-Man*, and therefore to be a Mediator between God and Man, partaking of the Nature of both, and laying his Hand upon both, *to make Peace for us thro' the Blood of his Cross.*

Child. I cannot understand this, it is all wonderful! A wonderful Mystery!

Moth. It is so, my Dear: This is the great Mystery of Godliness, God manifest in the Flesh.

Child. And did this *God-Man*, Mother, die *FOR ME, how is that?*

Moth. He died for the Sins of all that believe on him.

Child. But what is it you mean by dying for Sin, and dying for me, *Mother*, I do not understand it?

Moth. Sin, my dear, is offending God, or making God angry, and this Sin, or this Anger of God would end in Death; *for the Wages of Sin is Death:* But God, in his own Original Love to us, sent his Son to die in our stead, that whosoever receiveth him might not die, but have Everlasting Life.

Child. And so *if I sin*, I must die, Mother?

Moth. Yes, *my dear.*

Child. And must you die *if you sin*, Mother?

Moth. Yes, *my dear.*

Child. But you never sinn'd *I hope then.*

Moth. Alas, my Dear, *I am a great Sinner.*

Child.

Child. Why, you must not die, *Mother*, you shall not die *Mother*, shall you?

[*The Child weeps.*

Moth. We must all die, *my dear*, but this is meant of Eternal Death, *going to Hell* Child, dying *for Ever!* This is that which is *the Wages of Sin.*

Child. Must all that sin go to Hell, Mother?

Moth. No, *my dear*, this is what I was saying before, that God being *thus angry* with Sinners, and the Wages of their Sin *being Death*, this Blessed Son of God, this *God-Man* the Mediator, came into the World, and taking on him our Nature, died *FOR US*; there 'tis, *my dear*, in your Bible, *Romans* 5. 6. *That while we were yet without Strength, in due time Christ died for the Ungodly.* And there again, 1 *Tim.* 1. 15. *This is a faithful Saying, and worthy of all Acceptation, that Jesus Christ came into the World to save Sinners*: And in abundance of other Places.

Child. Let me see it *Mother*, for my Father said *God spoke* in my Bible, and I shall be sure it is true, if it be there.

Moth. I'll turn the Leaf down at it, *my dear*, that you may find it again.

[*The Child reads again* — died for the Ungodly: *And looking up to its Mother, asks this very affectionate Question:*

Child. Dear *Mother*, Did Jesus Christ die for me! what, for me! I did not know him! I had done nothing to make him die! nor I have done nothing to please him! I never loved

him! how should he love me! and love me so as to die for me! why for me, *Mother!*

Moth. This, *my dear*, is the great thing for which we should praise, and love, and adore God, and Jesus Christ, that all this should be done *FOR US* before we had either done Good or Evil; as thou hast said, *my dear*, thou hast done nothing to please him, nor hast loved him, it is all his own Love to us, not our Love to him.

Child. Why! would God love me, whether I loved him or no, *Mother!*

Moth. Yes, *my dear*, see in your Bible, *John* 3. 16. *For God so loved the World that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting Life.* And again, 1 John 4. 10. *Herein is Love, not that we loved God, but he loved us, and sent his Son to be a Propitiation for our Sins.*

Child. But may not I love God *now* for all this Love, *Mother?*

Moth. Yes, *my dear*, his Love to us moves us to love him, 1 John 4. 19. *We love him because he first loved us.*

Child. Indeed *I will love God!* sure I must love him if he will not be angry, tho' I sin against him! *Don't you love him*, Mother?

Moth. I desire to love, and fear, and serve him as long as I live, *my dear.*

Child. And may not I do so too, *Mother?*

Moth. Yes, *my dear.*

Child. And did you do so before, *Mother?*

Moth. I hope I did, *my dear.*

Child. But I have not done it before, *Mother.* Was not that a Fault in me, *Mother?* And is not God angry at that?

Moth.

Moth. Well Child, but you have heard that *Jesus Christ* died to turn away God's Anger for that, and all other Sins.

Child. Indeed, *dear Mother*, I did not know I must love God, and fear God *before*; I never heard any thing of it in my Life!

[*Here the Mother is stung again, and reproaches herself with having neglected the Instruction of her Child, and weeping, says to the Child:*

Moth. My *Dear*, That is my Sin, and thy Father's Sin, and not thine, we ought to have taught thee *long ago*, and we have reason to mourn for it, and repent of it as long as we live.

Child. But may I not love God now, *Mother?*

Moth. You must love God, and love Jesus Christ, and serve and fear him; this is one End of your Creation.

Child. How can I love Jesus Christ now *Mother?* you say he is dead; can I love him now he is dead?

Moth. He is risen again, Child, from the Dead.

Child. Risen again, *Mother!* How is that?

Moth. My Dear, *as I told thee before*, it was necessary for him to be Man *as well as God*, that he might in our Nature satisfie Divine Justice, so it was necessary, he that was to be a Mediator, should be *GOD as well as Man*, that he might justifie us before God, and interceed with God for us for ever.

Child. How is this! *I wonder at it*, but do not understand it; how is it, *Mother?* dead! and alive again! and risen! and intercede! What is it all? I do not understand it.

Moth.

Moth. As Man, he could die, *Child*; but as God, he could not remain dead.

Child. Is this in my Bible too, *Mother*? *does God say this there too*?

Moth. Yes, *my dear*, look here, *Acts* 2. 24. *Whom God hath raised up, having loosed the Pains of death, because it was not possible he could be holden of it.*

Child. But is he risen again for me too!

Moth. Yes, *my dear*, he has both died for thee, and is risen again for thee too.

Child. Show me that in my Book, *Mother.*

Moth. Here it is, Child, *Rom.* 4. 25. *Who was delivered for our Offences, and is risen again for* * *our Justification.*

[* *Here the Child in a little extasie of Soul*, mov'd by the blessed Spirit of God, *grasps the Book, and kisses the Leaf eagerly, clapping it to its Breast, at which the Mother surpriz'd, says,*

Moth. Why dost thou do that, *my dear*?

Child. I love him, *dear Mother*, I love him!

Moth. Dost thou know *why* thou lovest him, *my dear*?

Child. I love *GOD*, *dear Mother*, that has loved me so much before I knew him, and I love *Jesus Christ* because he has died *for me*, and is risen again *for me*! may not I love him, *dear Mother*? For tho' I love him, I am afraid, for my Father told me *he is a dreadful God.*

Moth. It is true, *he is a consuming Fire* to Sin, and the Workers of it; but to those who love and fear him *he is a faithful Creator, and a merciful Redeemer.*

Child.

Ch. Then I may love him for that?

Mo. May! *my dear*, you not only *may*, but muſt. *Matt.* 22. 37, 38 *Jeſus ſaid unto him, thou ſhalt love the Lord thy God with all thy Heart, and with all thy Soul, and with all thy Mind. This is the firſt and great Commandment.*

Ch. Will he not be angry *Mother*, if I don't love him?

Mo. Yes, *my dear*, for he has commanded you to love him. *John* 15. 9. *Continue ye in my Love.* And *Gal.* 5. 22. He ſaith, *The fruit of the Spirit is Love.* And he has promiſed a bleſſed Return to thoſe that love him. *John* 14. 21. *He that loveth me ſhall be loved of my Father, and I will love him, and will manifeſt my ſelf unto him.*

Child. I wiſh I could love him more, *dear Mother.*

Moth. You will, *my Dear*, as you grow up.

Child. How, *Mother?*

Moth. Why, the longer you live, the more you will know him; and the Knowledge of God and the Experience of his Goodneſs will increaſe your Love.

Child. How ſhall I know him more?

Moth. I hope he will fill thy Heart with Knowledge according to the Promiſe of the Covenant of Grace.

Child. What is that, *Mother?*

Moth. It is the bleſſed Declaration of God *in his Word*, wherein he has engag'd himſelf, and his Faithfulneſs to his Believing People, both to be their God, and to preſerve them in his Fear.

Child. And has he promis'd me that I ſhall know him, *Mother?*

Mo.

Moth. Yes, *my Dear.*

Child. Is that in my Book too, *Mother?*

Moth. Yes, *my dear*, here it is; *Jer.* 31. 34. *And they shall teach no more every man his Neighbour, and every man his Brother, saying, Know the Lord; for they shall all know me, from the least of them unto the greatest of them, saith the Lord: For I will forgive their Iniquity, and will remember their Sin no more.*

Child. And what shall I do when I know him?

Moth. Knowing him, you will believe on him, and believing, you will have Life thro' his Name, *John* 20. 31.

Child. When shall I do this *Mother?*

Moth. As thou growest up, *my Dear.*

Here some Family Occasions calling off the Mother, the Second Dialogue ends.

Notes on the second Dialogue.

FIrst observe of the Child's being carried to Church, That by the word Church, or going to Church, in all these Dialogues, is to be understood the Place, and *going to* the place of publick Worship, whether in the Church of *England* People to their Parish-Churches, or in Dissenters to their several Meeting-Houses, the particular distinguishing it one way or another being studiously avoid-

avoided here; the Subject, as the Author humbly conceives, being not at all concern'd in our diversity of Opinions, Sects, or separate Assemblies, but equally instructing to all who call themselves Christians, and especially Protestant Christians; he believes it would be very much Wrong to lay a Stumbling block at the Threshold, and to put any Prejudice in the Minds of the serious Readers; which also might prevent by partiality to Opinions, the Benefit which may otherwise be universal to Christians of all Opinions whatsoever; and this Latitude in his Charity, and in his design of doing Good to all, he hopes none will be offended at.

The Father and Mother of this little Child appear here to be no ignorant Persons in the Principles or Duties of Christianity; but as to the rest it may be observ'd, (1.) What a wretched irreligious Life some of those who have the greatest Share of Knowledge in Matters of Religion do lead, especially in their Families. (2.) What Regret it brings upon their Minds when they are convinc'd of their Wickedness in the Neglect of their Families, and when, as in this case, much of it may be too late to be retriev'd.

(3.) What bitter Reproaches such Children oftentimes cast back upon their Parents, when they [*the Children*] come to find what they have lost for want of a godly, religious Education, and early Instruction, either good Children or bad.

If the Children prove sober and religious without the helps of Instruction, *for the Spirit of God is not confin'd or restrain'd to these outward Helps,*

Helps, how are they asham'd of, and a Shame to their Parents! And how must the Parents blush when they may upon any Occasion be told, that the Knowledge, the Piety, the Fear of God, which is found in their Children, is no Product of their planting, no Fruit of what they had sown; Religious Chrildren of prophane or negligent Parents, are a double Testimony to powerful invisible Grace, but a dreadful Reproach to the Parents.

This may be a Thought worthy the Consideration of any Christian Parent, That having neglected the Instruction of their Families, and neglected teaching, and praying with, or for their Children, what a just Contempt will those Children naturally have for those Parents! If ever God by his Grace, comes to enlighten their Hearts, and open their Eyes, *as he sometimes does without the help of Paternal Instruction*; when the Children come to reflect how their Parents totally neglected the Salvation of their Souls, compar'd to which, the Provision made for their Bodies was but of little Value, the Disgust at the Omission of the former will be too apt to take off all the Gratitude and Affection due for the latter.

Nothing but meer Duty can be supposed to preserve the Child's Respect, and even common Civility to its Parents, when he comes to be sensible how unnaturally they abandon'd his Immortal Part; how unchristianly they expos'd his better, his Intellectual Part, to Eternal Destruction, as if the Duty of a Parent had ended, or been restrain'd within the narrow Compass of the Office

fice of a Nurse, or a Schoolmaster; and that they had no Obligation upon them to regard the eternal Happiness of that part of their Posterity which can never die.

Such Parents are certainly the most unnatural, and may justly be reproach'd by their Children, not with neglect of their Duty *only*, but with their being without Natural Affections, and consequently can by no means expect suitable returns of Affection from their Children, when they come to be made sensible of the Treatment they have receiv'd from them; if they show them common respect, *as above*, it must be all owing to that very Grace, which in spight of the Obstructions of a Godless Education has been planted in the Heart by the powerful Influence, and invincible Operation of the Spirit of God.

For Parents to pretend Love to their Children, and Natural Affection, as they are the Fruit of their Bodies, and *(as is vulgarly express'd)* their own Flesh and Blood, and at the same time neglect to Instruct them, or Educate them either in humane Learning, or religious Knowledge, is just as if, when their Children are taken sick, they should employ themselves in mending or making them Cloaths, or dressing up fine Banquets or Entertainments for them, and wholly omit the necessary Cordials or Applications for the recovery of their Health; *only with this difference*, that the Soul to the Body has infinitely a greater Disproportion than the Health, and the daily Food.

But our Case extends yet farther, viz. That the Defect complain'd of here, is not the want of

of Education and Instruction, from the Ignorance or Incapacity of the Parent; for this had been the Hand of God immediately in bringing forth the Child from Parents that knew not God; but *the Case here* is yet more aggravated, in that *this happens* in Families where the Parents have the Knowledge, and have the Capacity, and know, and acknowledge it to be their Duty to instruct their Children, and yet entirely neglect it, which adds to the Crime in the Parent, and will be ground of Astonishment and Reflection in the Children, *if they ever come to the Knowledge of God without the due Assistance* of their Parents. Nor will the Reflections of the Parents be less bitter on themselves than those of their Children, as will be more lively represented in the other Dialogues of this Part.

But this Subject may also be of present Use to Children who have not the Blessing of Godly Parents to instruct them, and for this it is also design'd; and these as well as those whose Parents neglect the great Duty of instructing them, are desir'd to consider from the Example of this little Child these few things.

1. That the most plain, most natural, and most easie Questions that it is possible a Child can ask, will lead them to know both their Creator, and their Duty to him: *Such as*,

Who made me?
What was I made for?
What am I?
What Business have I here?

How

How came I hither?
Whither am I going?
What is my End?
What is Good?
What is Evil?

The little Babe *here represented*, infers by the meer Power of Natural reasoning,

1. That he was made better than the Brutes.

2. That it was the Goodness of his Maker which distinguish'd him so.

3. That Fear, Service, Love and Obedience were natural Returns for that Goodness. *Thus* the meanest Capacity, and the youngest Child may supply the Defect of Education, if they think but a little seriously of themselves, and the Original of their Being.

(2.) It is also observable, that as soon as ever the Soul is but able to enquire rationally about its self; *Nature* and *Reason* concur to lead him to the Knowledge of *a God*, a *First Cause*, a *chief Good*, and *an ultimate End*, *OF* whom, and *for whom*, and *TO* whom *are all things*; and these natural Impulses go on, till natural Religion, join'd with reveal'd Religion, discover Christ, *and God in Christ reconciling us to Himself, not imputing our Trespasses*, which is the Sum and Substance of the Christian Religion.

This is the great End of *these Dialogues*, as they respect Children, *viz.* That they may, *where*

perhaps

perhaps Family-Instruction has been wanting, guide themselves to the Knowledge of God, and of their Duty, by these familiar Steps which Nature it self will be most certain to concur with. As they respect Parents, their End is plain, *viz.* They are a Satyr upon their neglect of Duty, and a Reproof to them in Order to Amendment of which hereafter.

The

The Third
DIALOGUE.

THE Mother of this pretty Infant, ſenſibly affected with the Diſcourſe ſhe had had with him in the laſt Dialogue, and *in teaching her Child*, being particularly taught how ſhe had neglected her own Duty, appears nder a great *and more than ordinary* Concern: ler Husband was under *the ſame Convictions*, and ach were very deſirous to unboſom themſelves to ne another, tho' utterly ignorant of the reſpective Circumſtances: This occaſions the following Dia- ogue or Diſcourſe between the Husband and the Wife; the reſt of the Family being withdrawn, he Husband perceiv'd his Wife melancholly, and hat ſhe had been weeping, and *being a very tender oving Husband*, begins with her thus:

Husband. MY *Dear*, what is the Matter? I believe ſomething troubles thee.

Wife: I cannot deny it, and if I did, you ſee cannot conceal it. [*Wife weeps, and is backwards to tell the Occaſion, but her Husband preſſes her to tell him.*

Husb. Tell me, *my Dear*, what affiicts thee; if it be in my Power to relieve it, you have no reason to doubt but *as in Duty I ought*, so in Affection I am inclin'd to give you all the Comfort, all the Advice, and all the Assistance I am able.

Wife. Alas! You, *nor all the World* cannot assist me in my Case; and the reason why I am backward in telling it, is because *when I do*, you will, perhaps, be so far from easing my Grief, that you will add to it, *by falling into the same your self*, for my Affliction equally concerns you and my self.

Husb. My Dear, there is no Affliction can befal thee, but either I must have an equal Share in it, or be wanting in Affection to thee, *which I never was yet*, or concern for my own Happiness, since, ever since we have been One by Consent or by Contract, I have had but one Interest, one Wish, and one Desire with you, and this not by Duty only, but by Inclination.

Wife. I have a full Experience of that, and thought my Happiness always compleat in it, and the more, in that I have not been able to charge my self with the least Breach *on my part* to render that Affection less pleasing *to you*, or less satisfying *to me*; but we have both been wanting in one thing, and, I fear, have nothing to excuse one another, or to blame one more than another, and this is my present Grief. [*The Husband touch'd before, answers with Blushes in his Face.*

Husb. I know not what you can mean, unless it be want of performing some Duties which we owe to God and our Children.

Wife.

Wife. O you have touch'd it! *there it lies*; and if you had had such a Messenger sent from God *to reprove you for it* as I have had *to Day*, I question not but it would have touch'd you as nearly as it does me.

Husb. I know not what thou hast had *to day*, but I had such a Lecture preach'd to me Yesterday by a little dear Infant, *even our own youngest Son*, that has almost broke my very Soul within me; and you may know part of it *by this*, that you know I slept not a Wink all last Night.

Wife. O my Dear! the same is my Instructor! he has certainly been sent from God to me.

Husb. And to me too; whether it be for a blessed restoring End, or for Judgment, and the terrible part of Conviction, he only knows.

[Here they repeat to one another the Circumstances of the former Dialogues with the Child, and the Effects which the surprise of it had upon both their Minds severally.

Husb. It is impossible to express to you how the little Creature mov'd me; it was a Dagger *struck into my very Heart* to hear the *dear Lamb* ask me, Father, *will not God be angry with me that I have not thank'd him, and lov'd him, and pray'd to him before? And how should I know it*, Father, *you never told me!* When I told him he must pray to God, was it not cutting me to the Heart to hear it say, *Do you pray to him, Father?* And when I told him *Yes*, to have him say, *I never hear you, Father:* I was not able to bear it, I was fain to stop, and turn away from him.

Wife. I believe we may both say as the Disciples at *Emmaus*, *Did not our Hearts burn within us when he talked to us by the Way?* For my part, I am amaz'd when I look upon the Child, but *when I look in*, and reflect how I have neglected the great Duty of Instructing *not this Child only*, but all my Children, *I am confounded*, and not able to hold up my Head: How justly may my Children reproach me! not only with omitting to teach them to do good, but with abominable encouraging them to Vanity, and neglect of God, by my Example. O I have ruin'd all my Children!

Husb. No no, you have not ruin'd them, *it is I* have ruin'd them; for it was my Duty to have exercis'd the Authority *of a Father*, and of a Governour of a House; to have set up the Worship of God in my Family; to have prayed *with them* and *for them*, and instructed them to pray *for themselves*; they could not have ask'd me then whether *they might* pray to God, or whether *ever* I prayed to God *or no.*

Wife. And *I have* been a great Cause of your neglecting that Part too, for I have slighted it, and ridicul'd it in others, and thought it meer Ostentation, and Form, as if none but Persons of higher Quality should have Prayers in their Family, and thought it look'd too big for us.

Husb. Ay, but *my Temptation* has been of another kind, I have thought it a Solemnity I was *not fit* for; I have question'd my own Performance; I have often thought, If I was a *Noble man* I would keep a Chaplain, but I was asham'd to pray in the Hearing of my Servants and Children, as if that was dishonourable and mean

which was my natural Duty; or as if I was asham'd to own that which was the Glory of a Christian, *viz. To worship and call upon him that made him*; as if Nature, which dictates to the least Child to call and cry to its Father and Mother for Bread *when it is an hungry*, did not dictate to me, and to every rational Creature to worship that God in whom we live and move, and have our Being!

Wife. And what Course shall we take now?

Husb. There is no Difficulty in resolving what Course to take with this little Infant, *he is taught from Heaven*, and the Spirit of God is visibly working in him; if we do not *instruct him*, he will every Day *instruct us*, and *reprove us too*; but what shall we do with our other Children! who are grown up, and have imbib'd a Course of Vanity and Levity without any Restraint? There will be our Difficuly!

Wife. And who are very likely to be impatient of Restraint, and perhaps not so easily to be governed now; *for my part*, I do not think I shall ever be able to break my Daughter from her foolish Habits, such as playing all Night at Cards, going to the Play, wearing Patches, reading foolish Romances, singing idle Songs, taking God's Name in vain, and an intollerable Looseness of Behaviour, which I have too much given her a Liberty in, and encourag'd her also from my own Example.

Husb. I shall have as hard a Task with my elder Sons, that have got a Habit of Company, of ill Words, and of Idleness, it is impossible to reclaim them! they are gone too far! What shall

be done! they are lost thro' my Neglect! and justly may they lay their Ruin at my door, both Body and Soul.

Wife. *My Dear*, we are in a sad Condition! and mine is worse still, for I have not only neglected my Duty to my Children, and praying with my Children, but my Duty to God too, I mean my private Duty; for I neither prayed with them, nor for them, nor by my self, nor for my self, *the common going to the publick Worship excepted*, which I have pass'd over as slightly and unconcern'd also, as if it were only a thing of course.

Husb. This touches me too, *my Dear*; for it was my Duty not only to have prayed with my Children, and with my Family, but in private *with you*, and *for you*, and we both ought mutually to have assisted, encouraged, and exhorted one another *in* and *to* our Duty; I ought to have watch'd over you, and mov'd you, and perswaded you to your Duty, and you me, both as to private, and Family-Worship: It all lies at my door, and at my hand will God require the Souls of those he had put under my Roof!

Wife. I have been as guilty *as you*, for I have shewn a general Contempt of this Duty, I have never encourag'd you to it, or shewn you *in the least* that I desir'd it, or would be willing to join in it; on the contrary, you have always seen me as wild, and as vain, as if I was not a Mother of a Family, but a single Person without any relative Obligations on me. [*Here both Husband and Wife not able to refrain Tears, from the Power of their Conviction, the Discourse breaks off for a time, till the Husband reviving it, goes on.*

Husb.

Husb. It must be done! however difficult, however *seemingly* fruitless, and to no purpose; *by how much* the greater it has been a Sin in us both to neglect it, *by so much* stronger is the Obligation upon us to undertake it; the poor Children are well-nigh undone *already*, it is never too late: Who knows but God may bless Instruction, tho' begun at an unseasonable time, *it may be* we may yet meet with Success in the way of our Duty, *if not*, we must leave that to God; *we must begin*, and we *must go on*, for as we both know it is our Duty, our Children *may be still lost*, notwithstanding our Endeavour; but we are *sure to be lost*, if we willfully neglect it.

Wife. Alas! what can we do! where can we begin now! which of our Children will mind what we say! How will they humble us, by throwing our own Example in our Way, and object our former Practice as an Answer to all our future Instructions! *I think verily it is too late now*, it will be all to no purpose to go about it; it will have no Effect at all!

Husb. My Dear, you say you are sensible it has been a Sin that you have not encourag'd me in it, and join'd with me in it before; it must be therefore still a Sin to continue to do so, and a greater Sin than before, by *how much* we are convinc'd now that it was our sinful Neglect before.

Wife. Nay, I will not obstruct it! God forbid! *I only say*, I fear the Event will not answer, and I am at a loss which way to go about it.

Husb. I'll tell you, *my Dear*, which way we will go about it; let us first *join together* sincerely

to

to God in Prayer, acknowledging with a deep Humility, and hearty Repentance, *our great Sin* in neglecting his Worship in our Family, as well as in private, and our dishonouring him in our Conversation, imploring *for the Sake of Jesus Christ, our only Mediator and Advocate*, Pardon for those our past Sins *of Omission* and *Commission*, seeking his Blessing upon our Resolution of Amendment; and begging, that our Instructing our Family and Children, *however late! and long omitted*, may yet be successful, and have a double Effect, to the Salvation of the Souls of our Children, and to the Glory and Honour of Sovereign Grace.

Wife. My *Dear*, however doubting I am of the Success, yet *I'll join with you with all my Heart* in that, and in every thing else that I can, which may serve to reform, reclaim, and restore our poor Children, whose Danger is so plainly occasion'd by our Neglect.

Husb. As to my Family, I'll tell you what I purpose to do; I desire you to let *your Daughters* know, that we are resolv'd to reform several Practices which we do not like in their Behaviour; that their Father dislikes their general Conduct; *expects* they take up more Modesty in their Dress and Conversation; *will have* them wear no more Patches, go to no more Plays, *spend* no more Time in playing at Cards, nor *walk* out in the Park or Fields any more on the *Lord's Day*, but on the contrary, apply themselves to reading the Scriptures, and to think of worshipping God after a different manner than they have hitherto done, and I shall take care *to do the same* by my Sons. *Wife.*

Wife. I will do *all I can* with them; tho' I fear their Compliance.

Husb. Then, as soon as they all come home next Sabbath-day from the Sermon, I will call them all together, and to the best of my Capacity tell them their Duty *in general* both to God, themselves, and their Parents; and that *whereas* I have thought they have taken too much Liberty *for the time past*, because I have not restrain'd them, and shew'd them their Duty, they shall have no reason for the future to make that Excuse from me, but that from this time I resolve to oblige all my Family to serve God both publickly and privately *as much* and *as well* as I can, that they may both *incline* to pray to God themselves, and *know how* to do it: I shall, *besides the Publick Worship of God, which I shall expect they constantly attend*, always have proper times set apart for worshipping God *together* in the Family, will pray *with them* and *for them* as I am able: And having said thus, I will begin with reading the Word of God to them, and then, *as well as I can*, will go to Prayer with them my self.

Wife. My Dear, I'll be glad of this *with all my Heart*, and rejoice at the Thought of it; but *O! my Soul trembles* for the poor vain Creatures our Children, especially our two Eldest, *Son* and *Daughter*; I am certain they will but laugh at it, and despise it; *they are run on too far*, we should have begun this when they were young: I know it by their Temper and Carriage in other things.

Husb. My Dear, it is our Duty to do it, *and* it is our Duty to *make them* observe it, and tho'

tho' they are *too old* to correct, yet, *I assure you*, if I don't find a ready compliance with it, I shall find Ways to show my Resentment; for we have too long dallied with our Duty already, and as God will not be *mocked by us*, so we must not *be mocked by our Children*.

Wife. *My Dear*, I am most desirous of the thing, only my Heart fails me in the Case of Success.

Husb. We must do our Duty, *if God will bless us in doing it*, he will bless the Work too, and will cause such an Awe of his *Majesty* to go with the Performance, as that they shall not dare to despise it, or to shew any Contempt *of us* for it.

Wife. Lord give such a Blessing, if it be his Will! I go as willingly about it as you, but with many discouraging Thoughts about *the Event*; but however, I'll do all my Part according to your Direction.

End of the Third Dialogue.

Notes *on the Third Dialogue.*

WHat a great deal of Work have those People behind-hand, who do not begin to instruct and restrain their Children till they are too big for Correction! *FOLLY that is bound up in the Heart of a Child*, *says* Solomon, is driven *thence*

thence by the Rod of Correction: But when it remains in the Child, and neither the *Rod* of Correction, or the *Voice* of Instruction is made use of *to drive it out* till the Child grows up to be a Man, it is very hard, nay impossible, *but by a supernatural Assistance*, to drive it out at all. *What this Folly is*, needs no Description here, other than an allow'd Custom in doing Evil, a natural Propensity we all have to Evil; with this we are all born into the World, the Soul is originally bent to *Folly*; this Bent or Inclination must be rectified, *or driven out* either by *Instruction*, or if that proves insufficient, by *Correction*; and it is to be done while the Person is *young*, while he is a *Child*, and then *IT MAY* be done: The Child *may* be wrought upon; Nature like some Vegetables, is malleable when taken *green* and *early*, but hard and brittle when condens'd by Time and Age, *at first* it bows and bends to Instruction and Reproof, but afterwards obstinately refuses both.

The Temper of a Child misled by Vice or Mistake, *like a dislocated Bone*, is easie to be reduc'd into its Place, *if taken in time*, but if suffer'd to remain in its dislocated Position, a callous Substance fills up *the empty Space* whither it should be return'd, which by neglect grows equally hard with the Bone, and resisting the Power of the Surgeon's Skill, renders *the Reduction* of the Member or Limb to its proper Position impossible.

The Heart of the tender Youth, by forbearance of Instruction, grows opinionated, and obstinately embraces the Follies he has been indulg'd in, not being easie to be convinc'd of the criminal

nal quality of what he has been so long allow'd the Practice of *by his negligent Parents*, and this renders late Instruction fruitless: *THEN as to Correction*, the Heart being hardned, as before, by Opinion and Practice, and especially in a Belief that he *ought not to be corrected*, the Rod of Correction has a different Effect; for as *the Blow* of a Stripe makes an Impression on the Heart of a Child, as stamping a Seal does upon soft Wax, the Reproof even of Words on the same Heart when grown up, and made hard, is like striking upon Steel, which instead of making an Impression *on the Metal*, darts back sparks of Fire in your Face.

As this whole Work is chiefly design'd to convince Parents of the Necessity of beginning early the great Work of instructing and managing their Children, so *two things* will run more visibly thro' every Part of it.

(1.) *For their Encouragement*, the Examples of the easiness and advantages of early Instruction will be seen: How soft! how pliable the Minds of little Children are! how like Wax they lie ready to be moulded into any Form, and receive any Impression that the diligent application of Parents thinks fit to make upon them! From whence also Parents *are warned* to be very careful that by their Example or Negligence those first softned Circumstances of their Childrens Minds *are not pass'd over* without suitable Applications to forming them aright, and filling them with Learning and Knowledge, and with just Principles, both religious and moral; *above all*, that they receive no bad Impressions from the Practice

Practice of their Parents, whose Example, *especially in Evil*, takes such deep Root in their Children, that nothing is more difficult to remove.

(2.) *For Warning, and serious Caution to Parents*, by letting them see the dreadful Effects of the neglecting their Children when young; what Work it makes for Repentance in both; what breaches it makes in Families, when Necessity drives them to begin that Work late; what Treatment they are like to meet with from their Children; how these will think it hard to be instructed when grown up; count it imposing upon them in their Parents, reject the Arguments their Parents shall use; despise and contemn their Reproof; think themselves past Correction, and turn their Backs not only upon all the Methods their Parents shall take with them, but even upon their Parents themselves, when they attempt by Government and Discipline to retrieve the Error they have committed.

In this *last Dialogue* the Husband and Wife appear sensible of their Mistake this Way, and the Difficulties they have before them in retrieving it, *justly appear terrible*, and almost put them to despair of the Success, and even give over any Thoughts of the Attempt; in the subsequent Parts of this Work we shall find they were not mistaken in the Prospect they had of the Difficulty before them, or of the Obstinacy and Opposition which they should meet with from their Children:

As to their being *so discourag'd* as not to make the Attempt, the Husband argues wisely, that it is not less their Duty for its having been delay'd; that

that it must be set about, let the Difficulty be what it will; and that *he is resolv'd* to attempt it, and if possible, to go thro' it, leaving the Success to God.

This is a wise and Christian Resolution, and argues that the Convictions the Parent was under, were such as were sanctified by the Spirit of God, and carried on to effectual Conversion; *for* all Conviction of Sin that do not go on to Reformation and effectual Application to our Duty, are ineffectual Convictions; *like waking in a Dream*, while the Heart is asleep, and slumbering on, we fall into the same Dream again.

For the encouraging Parents to pursue these Convictions, and to hope for some Success in their Work, tho' begun late, and under some weighty Discouragements, *the following Part of this Work will shew* how far he met with Success in his Family Reformation and Instruction, as well as what Obstruction he met with from his eldest Children, for all were not alike obstinate and refractory as the Eldest were; and the Mother was but too true a Propheteſs of the Consequences from their Obstinacy.

From the Discourse between the Husband and Wife under their Convictions, may be seen something of the Duty of such Relations.

(1.) To communicate to one another their Griefs, and most inward Afflictions of Mind, as well as their common Disasters and Troubles of the World: This is one Part of the Duty of Husband and Wife to one another, *tho' understood by few*, meant and included in that short Phrase, being *AN HELP-MEET*; and it is observable

observable, that when such near Relations do affectionately communicate to one another their Souls Concerns *in such a manner as I speak of now*, God is pleas'd so variously to act in the Minds of such by his Spirit, that they shall in their Turns be mutually able to assist and comfort, direct and counsel one another: This, *if it were well observ'd*, would be very useful and encouraging to Christian Relations in their most serious and reserv'd Reflections; where they might take notice how that Party that is discourag'd and dejected *to Day*, and receives Support and Encouragements, Relief and Direction from the Counsel and comforting Assistance *of the other*, shall be restor'd and comforted, and perhaps enabled *the next time* to give the same Encouragement, Counsel, Advice and Comfort to the other, who may in like manner be sunk under his own Fears and Temptations.

This I thought fit to recommend in the most earnest Terms, and from just Experience, to the Consideration of Christian Relations, as a useful Observation, *in hope* it may be improv'd by the Experience of others, to the Glory of God, and their own Comfort.

(2.) The Duty of Parents *may be seen here* as it respects the Necessity of setting about the great Work of Family-Reformation, *however late*, and whatever the Discouragements may be, *the Father here* expresses this affectionately to his Wife: *Our Children*, says he, *may be still lost*, notwithstanding our Endeavour, but we are sure to be lost if we continue to neglect it.

From these Considerations the Father resolves to set about the Work, and immediately gives his Wife an account of the Method he proposes to himself to go upon, in which Method, like a prudent Man, and good Christian, he proposes a serious mutual Humiliation *to his Wife* for their former neglect of their Duty, and a fervent praying to God for his Blessing upon their Endeavours in their Family-Reformation.

Hence is intimated, and seriously recommended to Parents and Heads of Families, the great Work which is so much neglected, or rather so little regarded, of a Family joining in Confession of those Sins, *I mean of Husband and Wife*, which they have joined in the committing; would Husbands and Wives join seriously in humbling themselves together before God for those Family-Sins which they have join'd in the guilt of, Family Reformation would be set about with much more Earnestness and Application *than now* we see it is, and many Obstructions to it, which happen by our willingness to excuse our selves, would be removed.

From the manner of the Husband and Wife's Discourse here, *may be noted*, That where *thorough Conviction* works in the Mind, both Parties are *as it is here*, forwardest to accuse themselves whereas in most Family cases the Heads of Families seem always forward to shift off the Fault from themselves, tho' *they acknowledge* the Error, see plainly the defect, and the Consequences of it also in the Ruin of their Children; yet they are diligent, *like Adam and Eve*, in throwing the Guilt of it off from themselves, either upon one another

or upon Accidents and Circumstances, which they think may serve *to excuse themselves*; but if they were thoroughly touch'd with the thing it self, with the Guilt of it upon themselves, and the fatal Consequences of it upon their Children, they would mutually own the first, and deprecate the last, as our two penitent Parents do here. *O! I have ruin'd all my Children*, says the Mother. *No, no, you have not ruin'd them, It is I have ruin'd them*, says the Father; *I have neglected my Duty to them*, says the Father. *But I have been the Cause of your neglecting your Duty*, says the Mother.

Here is a compleat View for Parents, both of the Error, the Repentance, and the Reformation, the Disease, the Effects of it, and the manner of the Cure; and as these are the Foundation of what follows, so the following Dialogues are an Exemplification of most of the things contain'd in these Discourses of the two Parents, and the Connexion of them will be taken notice of throughout the whole Work.

The Fourth

DIALOGUE.

FOR the bettter understanding this Discourse, it is to be understood that the Father and Mother, according to their Resolution in the last Dialogue, *had set effectuall* about the Reformation of their Family, and about proper Methods for reducing their Children to an Obedience *to*, and Sence of their Duty.

Their Children were most of them grown up and had run a great Length, they had been indulg'd in all possible Folly and Levity, such as *Plays*, *Gaming*, *Looseness* of Life, and *Irreligious* Behaviour, not immodest or dishonest, that they were not arrived to yet; but they were bred up with *Gayety* and *Gallantry*, as being of good Fortunes and Fashion; but nothing of Religion, more than just the common course of going to Church which they did because it was the Custom and Fashion, rather than with any other View; and being thus unhappily Educated, we shall find that Instruction they were now to bear, met with much more Opposition in them, and we shall see how it had a various Effect according to the different Temper and Constitution of the Children.

The

Their eldeſt Daughter was about eighteen Years old, and her Mother, it ſeems, began with her firſt; the Mother found it a very difficult matter to deal with her: For when ſhe came to tell her of laying by her fooliſh Romances and Novels, *of which ſhe was mighty fond*; leaving off her Patches and Play-Books; refuſing her going to the Park on the Sabbath-Days, *and the like*, ſhe flew out in a Paſſion, and told her Mother *in plain Words* ſhe would not be hinder'd, ſhe was paſt a Child, ſhe would go to the Park, and to the Play, *and the like*, ay that ſhe wou'd.

But *the Mother*, whoſe Reſolutions were too well fix'd, *after ſuch an Occaſion as has been ſaid*, to be conquer'd by her Daughter, *having try'd ſofter Methods to no purpoſe*, took her roundly to task, and told her, That as ſhe took thoſe Meaſures with her *for her good only*, and that ſhe could not ſatisfie her own Conſcience, to ſee her ruin'd *Body* and *Soul* together, ſo ſhe was reſolv'd to be obey'd, and that ſince ſhe would not comply by fair means, ſhe would take another Courſe; this Courſe, it ſeems, *beſides other things which will appear in the following part of this Dialogue*, was *particularly*, that it being Sabbath-Day after they came home from Church, when her Mother began this Diſcourſe, her Daughter call'd for the Coach to go to the Park, as their Cuſtom, it ſeems, had always been, but *her Mother* would not ſuffer her to ſtir out, and upon her being a little ſtubborn or reſolute, had uſed ſome little Violence with her in ſhewing her Reſentment, and threatned her with worſe, *as will appear preſently.*

Upon this Repulse she flings up Stairs into her Chamber, where she sat crying, when *her elder Brother*, whom the Father, it seems, had not yet begun with, came to her, between which Couple begins the following Dialogue.

Brother. SIster! what in Tears! what's the matter now?

She cries on, but makes no Answer.

Bro. Dear Sister! tell me your Grievance, *I say tell me*, what is it troubles you? [*And pulls her by her Cloaths.*

Sis. I wont; don't trouble me, *I won't tell you*, let me alone. [*Sobs and cries still.*

Bro. Prethee what is the matter, *Sister?* Why, you will spoil your Face, you won't be fit to go to the Park; *come*, I came to have you *go out*, we will all go to the Park.

Sis. Ay, so you may if you can.

Bro. If I can! what do you mean by that? I I have order'd *Thomas* to get the Coach ready.

Sis. It's no matter for that, I can assure you *he won't do it.*

Bro. I'll Cane the Rascal if he don't, *and that presently too*; come, do you wipe your Eyes, and don't pretend to go Abroad with a blubber'd Face.

Sis. I tell you, *Thomas* will not obey you, he is otherwise order'd; you will find that neither you nor I are to go out to Night.

Bro. Who will have the Impudence to hinder us!

Sis. I have been hinder'd already, and my Mother has told me in so many Words, I not only

only shall not go *to Night*, but never no more of a Sunday, *tho' I think I shall fail her.*

Bro. What does my Mother mean by that, *not go to the Park!* I must go, and I will go, as long as Sermon is done, what harm is there in't? *I warrant you we will go*, come get you ready, and wipe your Eyes.

Sis. You'll find your self mistaken in my Mother, *I'll assure ye*; I told her I would go, *as you do me*, and she was in such a Passion with me, she struck me, which she never did in all her Life before, and then read me a long Lecture of the Sabbath-Day, and being against her Conscience, *and I know not what*, things I never heard her talk of in my Life before; I don't know what ails her to be in such a Humour.

Bro. Conscience! *What does my Mother mean by that!* Why, have we not gone every Sunday to the Park, and my Mother always gone with us! What, is it against her Conscience now, and never was against her Conscience before! *that's all Nonsence*; I'll warrant you I'll go for all this new Bustle you make about it.

Sis. I'd go with all my Heart, but *I tell you* she is in such a Passion you had better let her alone, it will but make her worse.

Bro Prethee don't tell me, I will go to the Park if the Devil stood at the Door; what, shan't I have the Liberty to go out when I please! *Sure I am past a Boy*, a'n't I!

Sis. I tell you, my Mother is very positive, and you had better let her alone, you will but provoke her; you may do as you will.

Bro. Not I, I won't provoke her at all, for I won't ask her, I'll go without her.

Sif. Then you will go without a Coach too; for I assure you, as I said before, you won't get *Thomas* to go.

Bro. Then I'll take a Hackney, and go to the Mall.

Sif. Come, Brother, we had better let it alone *for once*, my Mother will be better condition'd another time, *I hope this will be over.*

Bro. Nay, I don't care, *come let's read a Book then:* Have you never a Play here? Come, I'll read a Play to you.

Sif. Ay, what will you have?

Bro. Any thing.

[*She runs to her Closet for a Play-Book, and finds her Plays, Novels, Song-books, and others of that kind taken all away.*

Sif. O Thieves! Thieves! I am robb'd!

Bro. Robb'd! What do you mean, Sister?

[*He runs to her.*

Sif. All my Books are gone! they are all gone! all stole! I ha'n't a Book left!

[*Here you may suppose her taking God's Name in vain very much, and in a great Passion.*

Bro. What, all your Books!

Sif. Every one, that are good for any thing; here's nothing *but a Bible*, and an old foolish Book about Religion, *I don't know what.*

[*Her Brother looks.*

Bro. I think, *as you say*, they are all gone! *No, hold*, here's a Prayer-Book, and here's the *Practice of Piety*; and here's the *Whole duty of Man.*

Sif.

Sif. Prethee what signifie them to me? But all my fine Books are gone; I had a good Collection of Plays, all the *French* Novels, all the modern Poets, *Boileau*, *Dacier*, and a great many more.

Bro. What's the meaning of this!

Sif. I'll lay *a hundred Pound* this is my Mother.

Bro. I believe so too; I wish my Mother be not mad: This is horrid! What can my Mother mean!

[*Sister falls in a great Passion of crying; the Second Brother comes up to them, and the Father had been talking to him.*

2d *Bro.* What's the matter with *my Sister?* What, is she not well?

1st *Bro.* I don't know what's the matter *very well*, but my Mother has been ruffling her a little, and put her out of Humour.

2 *Bro.* What has she done?

1 *Bro.* Why, She won't let her go the Park; and when she said she *WOULD* go, *my Mother* struck her, and we find she has taken away all her Books, I can't imagine what the meaning of this is; I think my Mother is mad.

2 *Bro. No, no, Brother*, my Mother is not mad, if she is mad, my Father is mad too; you won't want long to know what the Meaning of it is, for you will hear of it quickly, *too* your self, *that I can assure you.*

1 *Bro. I hear of it!* What, from my Father?

2 *Bro.* Yes, *from my Father*; he has told me his Mind already, and the Reason and Occasion of it, and I know he is enquiring for you, *to do the like.*

1 *Bro.*

1 *Bro.* He may talk what he will to me, *but I'll do what I please* for all that.

2 *Bro.* Hark! you are call'd just now; you will be of another Mind when you come back, *I'll warrant you.* [*The eldest Son is call'd to come to his Father.*

1 *Bro.* Never *as long as I live.* [*goes out.*]

2 *Bro.* If my Father's Reasons do not perswade him, *I can assure him,* his Authority will, *for* he is resolv'd upon the thing.

Sis. What thing is it, Brother? What is our Father and Mother a going to do with us: For my part I cannot imagine what they mean!

2 *Bro.* Why really, *Sister,* I find they have begun with the *Youngest* first; for *my Father* has been upon me, and *my Mother* has begun with my Sister *Betty,* but you will have your Turn too.

Sis. I think *my Mother has begun with me already;* for I was but humming over a new Song this Afternoon, *tho' Church was done, and all over,* and every body come home; but my Mother was in such a Passion with me, *that* I never had so many Words with her in my Life; she would not let me go to the Park, and had much ado to keep her Hands off of me.

2 *Bro. I heard* she was angry at you, but, *it seems,* you answer'd her rudely.

Sis. I said nothing but that I would go to the Park.

2 *Bro.* Well, but you told her you would go *whether she would or no.*

Sis. Why, *was that such a Crime?* And so I would say again.

2 *Bro.* Well, *but if you did,* you would not say

say it was well done, *would you?* And, as it seems. she told you then, *so I can satisfie you now*, she will not take it from you, nor none of us, *as she has done.*

Sif. It may be so, and I have found it otherwise already.

2 *Bro. What*, has she not taken some Books *out of your Closet?*

Sif. Some! No, she has only taken all my Books away.

2 *Bro.* I warrant she has left your *BIBLE* and *Prayer-Books*, and such as those.

Sif. Ay those! What does that signifie? She has taken away all my Plays, and all my Songs, and all the Books *that I had any Pleasure in.*

2 *Bro. Yes*, I heard of it.

Sif. But I will have them again, or I'll lead her such a Life she shall have *little Comfort of me.*

2 *Bro.* Truly Sister, you may fancy you may have them again, *but I can satisfie you*, most of them are past Recovery, for I saw them upon the *Parlour-Fire* before I came up.

Sif. THE FIRE! I'll go and pull them out *before her Face.* [*Here she is raging, and in a violent Passion at her Mother, and makes as if she would run down Stairs.*

2 *Bro. Come Sister*, you had as good be easie, *for I find* both our Father and Mother are agreed in the thing; and *I must own* I begin to see they have reason for it; *for my part*, I am inclin'd to submit to all their Measures, for I think in my Conscience *we have all been wrong*, and if my Father and Mother see reason to have me alter my Conduct,

Conduct, *and especially* when I am convinc'd it is for the better too, I think it is my part to submit.

Sif. I'll never submit. [*The Sister cries again.*

2 *Bro.* Perhaps you will be perswaded when my Mother talks *a little calmly* to you; I believe *my Sister Betty* is of another Mind already.

Sif. I have had talk enough already; *my Mother tells me* I shall not go to the Park, nor to the Playhouse, nor patch, nor play at Cards, *I think this is talk enough*; what does my Mother think to make a Nun of me.

2 *Bro.* No, *I dare say* she does not.

Sif. No, and if she does *she will be mistaken*, for I shall not be hinder'd of my innocent Diversions, let my Mother do what she pleases.

2 *Bro. But Sister*, I do not think you will find my Mother unreasonable in what she desires, if you will but allow your self Leisure *to think of it* a little.

Sif. Unreasonable in her Desires! *Prethee* can you tell me what it is she does desire? For I cannot imagine what my Mother would be at.

2 *Bro. As for my Mother*, I cannot be particular, but if you are willing to hear me, I'll tell you what *my Father* said to me.

Sif. You may tell me if you will, *tho' I don't much care*, I won't be made a Fool of: What! *I a'n't a Baby*, to go to School again.

2 *Bro.* Why, *look you Sister*, you may stand out if you will a great while, but *I warrant* you must be content at last, for I do not see how you will help your self.

Sif. I warrant you *I'll help my self.*

2 *Bro.* Then you must renounce your *Father* and

and your *Mother*, and leave the Family, and I do not see what good that will do you, for I am satisfied my Father is resolute.

Sis. Resolute *in what, prethee?* What is it my Father would have? Does he think to make us all Fools? *What is it he talks of?*

2 *Bro.* I was going to tell you *the short History of it*, if you would have Patience: "Early this "Morning, *before we went to Church*, my Father "call'd me up into his Chamber, and after en- "quiring several things of me *about* my Learning, "my Company, and my Behaviour in the World, "to which I made as good an Answer as I could, "*he told me*, with a great deal of Tenderness, *that* "he lov'd me very dearly; *that* he intended to "do very well for me; *that* he had a particular "Kindness for me; and *that* he had but one thing "he desir'd of me, and that this was for my "own Good too, and desir'd to know if I was "disposed to comply with him: I told him, "*I was very willing to do any thing to oblige him, "who had been so good a Father to me.* He told "me, all he desir'd of me, *was this*, He had ob- "serv'd that his Family in general was running "on into all kind of Levity and Looseness; which "he was satisfied, would be their Ruin; *That* "he had been remiss in his Duty of Instruction, "and Reproof to his Children, but that he "begg'd God pardon for that Omission, and "would do his best to make us all amends: He "concluded with asking me, Whether I had ra- "ther *be a Rake*, or a *Sober Man:* I answer'd, "I hop'd he did not expect any Reply from me

"to

" to that, and that I hop'd I had not gone so far " as to make him doubt in the least that I did not " design to be a Sober Man. *Why, Son,* replies " my Father, you have no other way to do this, " but to conclude, that if there were *no* Divine " Law, *no* Future State, *no* Rewards or Punish- " ments; yet, regarding the Honour and Cha- " racter which you expect in the World, you " ought to be Sober, if it were only to preserve " your Reputation: *He told me*, that I knew he " had design'd me for the Practice of the Law; " that tho' he would do what he could for me, " yet, as he had a great many other Children, I " must expect to live, *or at least to advance my* " *self* by my own Merit and Industry; and that " a Lawyer, like a Virgin, having once lost the " Reputation of his Vertue or Sobriety, no body " will meddle with him.

" I not only listned very attentively to my " Father's Discourse, but looking steddily upon " him, I thought I saw more than usual Tender- " ness and Affection in him all the while he was " speaking; *whenever* he mention'd his having " omitted his Duty to his Family, I thought I " saw Tears standing in his Eyes, and to hear him " say, he begg'd God's Pardon for the neglect " of it, *brought Tears into mine*; when he told " me he would make us all amends for the fu- " ture, it suggested to my Mind, that my Father " supposed that this want of more early instruct- " ing us, *who are his Children*, was *our Loss* as " well as *his Fault*, and that we were not such " Children as we should have been *if we had* " *been better taught*. I must own to you, *Sister*,

" these

" these Thoughts have since made a great Di-
" sturbance in my Mind; I thought I saw the
" two young Ladies at next Door, and their
" Brother too, look'd like quite another sort of
" People *than we did*; they appear *so* modest,
" *so* sober, and yet *so* decently and genteely affa-
" ble and pleasant, that I think they live quite
" another Life than we do: *They never* swear,
" nor use lewd and prophane Words in their
" Discourse; *they never* sit up all Night at Cards,
" or go a Visiting a Sundays, nor do a hundred
" foolish things that our Family makes a Trade
" of, *and yet* they live as merrily, and as com-
" fortably, and as sociably, and as genteely as
" we do.

" *I must own to you*, tho' I have often laugh'd
" at them, and ridicul'd them before, yet my
" Thoughts often told me they liv'd a more rati-
" onal Life than we did, and when I heard my
" Father talk thus, it presently came into my
" Thoughts, that if my Father took the new
" Course with his Family *as he talk'd of*, we should
" begin to be like them, and I thought that
" would be very well for us all.

" Well, after my Father had gone on thus,
" and paus'd a while, *I suppose to hear whether*
" *I would say any thing to it or no*; I told him, I
" would be glad to do any thing to answer his
" End, and desired to know what it was he ex-
" pected of me; *my Father said*, The chief End
" of his Discourse was then to convince me of
" the Reasonableness and Necessity of an Alte-
" ration in my Life, and of the Advantages of
" a Religious Family, and of a sober, religious

" Educa-

" Education, and for the rest, if I was first sa-
" tisfied of the general, he knew it would be
" easie to bring me to comply with all the Mea-
" sures he should take to bring it about.

We had a great deal more such Discourse, but I told him I was very well satisfied that he design'd nothing but our Good, and I should be ready to observe all the Injunctions he should lay on me; and *truly Sister*, now I begin to reflect upon it, I find a great deal of Satisfaction in it; *for, upon my Word*, I think we have liv'd very odly all along, whether it were my Father's Fault or our own, I don't enquire, but if we knew no more, *none of us*, of the Town than we do of Religion, we should be a very unfashionable Family.

Sis. Prethee don't fill my Head with all this *canting Stuff*, I don't value it a Farthing.

2 *Bro.* Why, *Sister*, have you no manner of Inclination to live Religiously, and *like a Christian*, or to listen to what your Father may say to you.

Sis. I think I am religious enough in all Conscience; and I don't intend to disturb my Thoughts with any more Religion than needs must.

2 *Bro* You talk wildly now; *I hope* you would be a good Christian.

Sis. A Christian! Why, what do you take me for, a *Mahometan!* I think I am a very good Christian.

2 *Bro.* Why, *suppose that too*, yet if it were no more than that my Father desires it, and says, he resolves to have it so, you will hardly perswade your self not to submit to him; *you know* besides, that he is our Father, and we ought in Duty to obey him; for he has been the kindest, tendereſt, obliging'ſt

obliging'ſt Father in the World *TO US*, and it would be very ungrateful to ſhow your ſelf rude to ſuch a Father, as it would be wicked to diſobey him; *I am ſure* you would not be a Chriſtian if you ſhould.

Siſ. Don't tell me, I think my ſelf as good a Chriſtian as any of you, but I won't be made a Fool of, *for all that*, I had as liev you ſhould think me *no Chriſtian*, as you ſhould think me a Fool; *ſure* I am paſt my *Horn-book!*

2 *Bro.* And what, becauſe you are paſt your *Horn-book*, do you think you are paſt teaching! Have you nothing to learn but your *A, B, C?*

Siſ. No, no, I'll learn any thing too, but I won't be taught to be a Hermit; if they have a Mind to breed me up for an Abbeſs, let them ſend me to a Monaſtery; I'd as liev be in a real *Cloiſter*, as be *Cloiſter'd up* at Home: Uſe none of your *new Cant* with me; *I tell you, Brother*, my Mother may ruffle me as much as ſhe will, I'll have my own Way ſtill.

2 *Bro. Siſter! Siſter!* You may talk, and huff, and flounce about as much as you will, but you will have the worſt of it at laſt; for if both *Father* and *Mother* ſet upon it, *as I find they are both of a Mind*, they will conquer you at laſt, and perhaps it may mortifie you more than you think of.

Siſ. I am not ſo ſoon conquer'd *as my Father may think*; if they won't let be quiet at Home, I'll take another Method, I am not ſo much to ſeek.

2 *Bro.* Pray Siſter don't be angry with me for my Good-will, I'm not threatning you, nor my Father by me.

Sif. No, no, I won't be threatned neither *sure!* I'm too old for Correction.

2 *Bro.* But not for Advice, *I hope*, *Sifter*, nor for Instruction; and if my Father should think you deserv'd *Correction*, do you think there is no way for him to show his Resentment *but laying his Fingers on you?*

Sif. You may all do your worst, *I won't trouble my self about it*, 'tis in vain for them to threaten me.

2 *Bro.* Nay, Sister, I think you are so above my Father's threatning you, *that you talk as if you were threatning him*; would you be willing my Father should hear you?

Sif. You may tell him if you please.

2 *Bro.* Tho' that is very disobliging, *Sister*, yet I love you too well to go of that Errand, or to obey a Command that would be so much to your Prejudice.

Sif. I care not a Farthing if you did.

2 *Bro.* It is a Satisfaction to me that I know you will be of another Mind hereafter.

Sif. Not I, I defie you all, I'll go as far as my Legs can carry me, before I'll be confin'd, or made a Fool of.

2 *Bro.* Where-ever you go, I would have you take this Hint with you, That you *leave your Reputation behind you*, and especially *the Christian* will be left behind you.

Sif. Don't you trouble your Head about that. I shall take care of my own Reputation.

2 *Bro.* While it is in your own keeping, *I hope you will*, *Sister*, but you talk foolishly enough of *going away from your Father*; if you [illegible]

out of your Father's Doors, take my Word for it, your Character is at every Body's Mercy.

Sis. For what, pray?

2 *Bro.* Why should you ask, for what? Pray *what will you say*, or what would you have said to any *that shall ask you*, or *ask us* why you are gone away from your Father? *You won't venture to say*, that you *came away* because your Father was about to reform his Family? *That you came away* because you would not submit to be instructed by your Father! *That you came away* because your Father and Mother would have you more Religious than you were before! And *if you will not say that*, pray what can you say, or what can any body say for you?

Sis. I warrant you *I shall have enough to say*; and as for what *you* or *others* shall say, *you may say your worst of me*; I don't care.

2 *Bro. Truly*, the greatest Misfortune will be, that when we say *the worst*, we shall say the Truth, *and that* when we say the Truth, we must say *the worst of you* that can be spoken; and upon that account I hope you will consider what you do when you think of going from your Father's House, *tho' it were to the best Friend you had.*

Sis. Indeed, *if they put hard upon me*, I shall make no Scruple of it.

2 *Bro.* I cannot tell what you will say then *to bring your self off*: Pray, what do you call *putting hard* upon you? Will you call my Father's Desire to reform your Life, *a putting hard upon you*, I hope you will first prove that he designs to press you to *some wicked thing*, some forbidden, unlawful Course; but to call my Father's Desire to regulate

your Conduct, and reform your Life, I say, to call this *putting hard upon you*, every body that hears it will reflect upon you.

Sis. It's no matter for that, I won't be confin'd, not I.

2 *Bro.* Not from the worst Wickedness! *Do you mean you will not be confin'd so?*

Sis. I desire no Wickedness, *I don't know what you mean*, I have never expos'd my self yet, to be charged with any Wickedness.

2 *Bro.* But you will do it now, *it seems*, because your Father requires you *to be sober*.

Sis. Prethee what do you mean by *sober?* I think I am sober enough, and want no more reforming than any of you; *what would you have?*

2 *Bro.* I am no way taxing your Sobriety; but should be very glad you would encrease the Stock, and improve it, and I believe, my Father means no other.

Sis. Can't I be sober as well with all my Books my Mother has taken away, *as without them?* What can you tax me with that *is not sober*, that here is such a Rout about it?

2 *Bro. Dear Sister!* I do not find that my Father or Mother is inclin'd to tax you in particular *any more than all of us*, but all of us together, nay, even our Father and Mother themselves have been negligent, godless, and graceless; and if *my Father* does now resolve to repent, and turn and to carry himself after another manner, and to have us do the same, *pray what taxing can you call this?* Does not my Father say, he confesses he has been negligent, and has not done his Duty *as well as any of us?* And what is all he desires o

u

us *but only*, that as he begs Pardon of Almighty God for himself, *so* we should ask the same for our selves; *that as* he resolves to reform the Practice, *so we* should do also; and *that so* at last we may be a sober Family, and a reform'd Family, and may serve God for the future after another manner than we have done; *pray where's the Hardship of all this?*

Sis. Well, you may go on with your Reformation, and Confessions, *and all that*, if you have a Mind, for my part I'll have *nothing to do with it*, let my Father and all of you go your own Way.

2 *Bro. Well, Sister*, I am sorry for you; if you hold of this Mind, we are like to have *a foul House with you quickly*, for I know my Father will go thro' stitch with what he has begun.

Sis. My Father may go on with what he will, I shan't hinder him; *he may let me alone*, and reform the rest of you, can't he? I need no Reformation, *as I know of.*

2 *Bro.* I am not so sorry for the Difficulty my Father will meet with, *as for the Hazard you will run for your self*, and the Breach you will make in your own Happiness; but here comes my *Sister Betty*, I see by her Looks she has something to say upon the same Subject.

2d *Sister.* How long have *you two* been together?

2d *Bro.* a great while.

2 *Sis.* I suppose I know *something of your Discourse*, at least, I guess at it by your looking so grave: *Pray*, how long have you been *here?*

2 *Bro.* I told you a great while; *but since you*

would be answer'd particularly, I believe we have been here *just as long* as you have been with my Mother, *for I know* she has been talking to you.

2 *Sister.* That's true, my Mother and I have been talking.

1 *Sis. Talking!* do you say? *or Fighting?*

2 *Sis. Fighting!* What do you mean, *Sister?* Do you think I fight with my Mother!

1 *Sis. No*, but it may be your Mother may fight with you; why not *with you* as well as *with other Folks?*

2 *Sis.* My Mother never struck me in her Life, and I never gave her any Cause that I know of.

1 *Sis. That's more than I can say*, and yet I think I never gave her any more Cause than you did.

2 *Sis.* If my Mother has struck you, *certainly you must ha' given her more Cause than I have done*; for every body knows she loves you *to a distinction* above every Child she has.

1 *Sis.* I don't believe a word of it, nor do I desire *such Love.*

2 *Bro. Well Sister*, but you may tell us a little how you like things, and what Discourse my Mother has had *with you*, for we all know the Subject already.

2 *Sis.* My Mother said nothing to me *but what I like very well*, and am very willing to comply with.

2 *Bro.* I am very glad to hear you say so, *I wish we were all of the same Mind.*

2 *Sis. I hope we shall*; I think what she proposes is so rational, and the Reasons of it so unanswerably good, that I see no room to object against it *in the least*, nor do I see the

the least thing design'd in it all, but what is for our Good.

2 *Bro.* I am perfectly of your Opinion, and am glad to find you of my Opinion; *but here is my Sister MARY* quite of different Sentiments from us all.

1 *Sis.* And *with a great deal of Reason*, for she has not been treated with the same Kindness that you have been treated with.

2 *Sis.* Wherein, pray?

1 *Sis.* Why, I suppose my Mother has not been in your Chamber, and rifled your Closet, and taken all your choice Books, and your Plays, and your Songs, and your Novels, *&c.* and carried them away, and thrown them into the Fire.

2 *Sis. No, my Dear!* For what my Mother said to me was *so* affecting, *so* fully convincing, and *so* unanswerable, that I immediately fetch'd them all down my self, and put them into the Fire *with my own Hands*, before her Face.

1 *Sis.* A pretty complying, easie Fool, *I warrant she kiss'd thee*, and call'd thee *dear Child*, and cry'd over thee, did she not, for thy pains, *my Dear?*

2 *Sis.* I am asham'd to hear you talk so *of my Mother*, Sister; sure you ha'n't lost your *Manners*, and *Duty*, as well as Respect, and Religion, *Sister!* I beseech you what is the Matter with you!

1 *Sis.* And have you really burnt all your Plays to please a Humour?

2 *Sis.* Indeed I have burnt them, but not to please a Humour, I have done it to oblige the best Mother in the World, and I have done it from a Sence of its being very fit to be done.

1 *Sif.* *A fine Child!* And are not you a deal the wiser for it; do you not repent it already?

2 *Sif.* *No, Sister!* So far from repenting it, that I never did a thing in my Life that gave me more Satisfaction, and *if I were to do it again*, I should now do it with ten times the Pleasure I did it then; and if God give me Grace to keep my Resolution, I never design to see a Play, or read a Play more.

1 *Sif.* *Pretty Child!* Thorowly reform'd *at once*; this is a mighty sudden Conversion, and may hold accordingly, *I suppose*, as most such hasty things do.

2 *Sif.* *It will hold*, *I hope*, longer than your Obstinacy against it.

1 *Sif.* When it has *as good Reasons* I may think so too.

2 *Sif.* I shall debate that with you hereafter, when you have heard the same Reasons for it that I have heard.

1 *Sif.* Well, but come, *pray let's have a few of your Reasons* just now, if you can spare them; pray, what harm is there in seeing or reading a Play? Is there any sufficient Mischief in them to justifie your burning them, and to justifie my Mother's using me about them *as she has done?*

2 *Sif.* *In the first place, Sister*, the Time we have before us, compar'd to the Eternity that is to be prepar'd for, is *so* little, and *so* short, that if it be possible to employ it better, there is none to spare for what has so little Good in it *as a Play.*

1 *Sif.* I have learnt a great deal *of Good* from a Play.

2 *Sif.* but might you not have learnt more from the Scriptures?

1 *Sif.*

1 *Sis.* It may be not.

2 *Sis.* You would have been a bad Scholar then.

1 *Sis. Well*, and what's next?

2 *Sis. In the second place*, the little Good which you *can pretend* is to be found in them, is mix'd with *so much Evil*, attended with *so much lewd, vicious and abominable Stuff*, that no sober Person will bear with the *wicked part* for the sake of the *good part*, nor can any one justifie it, that the good Part is such, *or so great*, that so much Hazard should be run for it.

1 *Sis. Very well*; so you are afraid you should be tempted *when you go to the Play*, I suppose that is because you are so tempting your self.

2 *Sis. No Sister*, I am in no more danger, *I hope*, than another; but sure, if I am to pray to God, as in the Lord's Prayer, *Lead me not into Temptation*, I must not *lead my self* into it.

1 *Sis.* And is this *all you have to say* for throwing the best Collection of Plays the whole Town has, in the Fire.

2 *Sis.* I have many more Reasons which I shall bestow on you *when you have answer'd these*, but there is one more which I will bestow upon you now, which you may give an Answer to before the rest, if you please, *viz.* That it is my *Mother's* Desire and Resolution, that I should do so; and that she declares, it is against her Conscience to permit me the use of these things *as formerly*, and therefore desires, and in *one kind* commands, that I should do thus, and I am bid in the Scripture many ways to obey; *Children obey your Parents in all things*, &c.

1 *Sis.* That is the best Reason you have given yet.

2 *Sis.*

2 *Sis.* I think not, *neither*; for the other Reasons *are better*, as they are drawn from the Nature and Authority of God, *and this* but from the Authority of my Mother; which, tho' it is great, and ought to be very prevalent *with me*, and ever shall be so, yet not quite equal, or up to the Authority of him that made us all; nor will my Mother think hard that I say so.

2 *Bro.* Sister, *indeed I think* my Sister *Betty* has fully answer'd you there.

1 *Sis. Yes, yes*, you are two fine new Converts.

2 *Bro.* Which I hope we shall never be asham'd of.

1 *Sis. Well*, and pray what said you to her about going to the Park a Sundays? Had you nothing to say about that?

2 *Sis.* Yes, yes, my Mother shewed her Dislike of it, and said it was a plain Violation of the Commands of God; *I mused a little while about it*, and being convinc'd that it was so, I presently resolved never to go any more.

1 *Sis. So*, and you had not a Box on the Ear then?

2 *Sis.* I gave my Mother no Occasion for that, *Sister*, as I understand *you did.*

1 *Sis. No, no*, You are a mighty good, obedient thing.

2 *Sis.* I am not asham'd to own *that I obey my Mother*, and am willing to do so in every thing; *especially* every thing that is right, *more especially* in every thing that is for my own Good, and *most of all*, where my Duty to God joins with it; if you think it below you to do so, I am sorry for it, I cannot follow you in that Example; for the

the Scripture says expressly, *Children obey your Parents in all things*, much more where the Command of God, and the Command of our Parents *concur together*, as it does in this Case.

1 *Sis.* You preach nicely, *Sister*, You shall Marry a Parson, and when you turn *Quaker* you shall be *a speaking Sister*.

2 *Sis.* Any thing rather than a Rebel to God and my Parents, break the Commandments of the first, and abuse the Tenderness of the last.

1 *Sis.* You are mighty Mannerly *to your Sister*.

2 *Sis.* Much more to you, *than you* to my Mother; *I love my Sister very well*, but I know neither *Brother* nor *Sister* when they rise up against my Mother, and that *such a Mother* as ours is; who, I must tell you, *Sister*, deserves other things at your Hands; and unless you behave better, you will find the whole Family against you, *as well as I*, for every body says, you treated my Mother *very rudely*, the very Servants speak of it with Abhorrence, and of you with Contempt; for *every body must despise you* if you carry it so to your Mother.

1 *Sis.* With all my Heart; if *every body* despises me, *I'll despise every body*, and so I'll be even with you all.

2 *Sis.* You'll be soon tir'd of that.

1 *Sis. If I am*, I'll bear my Affliction with Patience.

2 *Sis.* You are like to be a Martyr in the worst Cause *that ever Saint suffered in*; no doubt but you will suffer for Conscience sake; two excellent Points in Divinity you maintain, *viz. Contempt of Religion*, and *Rebellion against your Parents:*

rents: I wonder what *Evil Spirit* is your Instructor.

1 *Sis.* You are very pert, *Madam*, and shew abundance of Affection and Respect.

2 *Sis.* I follow *your own Example still*, Sister, but I'll be very honest to you, I'll neither have *Respect* nor *Affection* to you, or any body, that shall carry it to my Mother as you have done; I would not load you, *or add to your Sorrows*, but no body in this House can do otherwise, who have such a Father, and such a Mother as we have.

1 *Sis.* I have no Sorrow about it, *and am resolved* I will have none.

2 *Sis.* I think the best way to deal with you, is to do, *as I fear God has done with you*, leave you; your Crime will be your sufficient Punishment: But I must tell you *before I go*, which I should have told you *at first*, that my Business was *not to visit you now*, but to call you to my Father and Mother, who want to speak with you *in the Parlour*, and where, I suppose you will hear more of it.

1 *Sis.* I won't go.

2 *Sis. As you please, Sister, for that*; I have delivered my Message.

1 *Sis. Ay*, and you may carry that for an Answer.

2 *Sis.* No, Sister, I'll *have no hand in your Misfortunes*; besides, I believe here comes another Messenger from them. [*A Servant comes up Stairs, and tells the eldest Lady that her Father and Mother waited to speak with her.*

1 *Sis.* I am indisposed, *tell my Mother*, I can't come, I am upon the Bed.

Servant. If you won't go, *Madam*, I doubt they will come to you.

1 *Sis.*

1 *Sis.* Go you, and deliver your Message.

2 *Sis.* And are you so resolute against your self, *Sister!* Can nothing perswade you to your own Good! Certainly you will be wiser.

1 *Sis.* What would you have me do? *What is the matter with you all?*

2 *Sis.* *Nay, Sister,* I am not fit to give you Advice, who are my elder Sister; *but* methinks you do not want Advice to go down when you are sent for.

1 *Sis.* I won't.

2 *Sis.* What shall I say to them? *I dare not say* you won't, *for your own Sake.*

1 *Sis.* Tell them, *I a'n't well, can't you?* that I am upon the Bed, and have shut my Door, and won't be spoke with; *tell them any thing*: Don't you see I an't fit to be spoke to?

2 *Sis.* As the Maid said, *I am certain* they'll come up *to you*, for they know your Distemper; I would fain have you go down, *I dare say*, you will be treated very tenderly and kindly, perhaps better than you can expect, if you do not force them to treat you ill.

1 *Sis.* Yes! after they have burnt all my Books; robb'd me of what they knew was my Delight; refus'd me the Liberty of going Abroad; and given me a Blow in the Face for nothing; now they'll treat me kindly, *will they!* I desire none of their Kindness: *I won't go.*

2 *Sis.* *Well, Sister,* then they must wait upon you, *I suppose.*

1 *Sis.* If they do, I won't speak to them, * or open the Door. [* *She cries vehemently.*

2 *Sis.* I hope you will alter your Mind, *I'll leave you to think of it.* [*The 2d Sister withdraws, and the other claps the Door after her.* This

THIS Dialogue needs no Observations, save on the different Temper between Children dutifully submitting to Family-Government, and affectionately complying with their Parents just Desires; and on the other hand, Children obstinately adhering to the Dictates of their Passions, and this will appear to every common Reader; and much of this *whole first Part* being Historical, and the Family known, I forbear farther Observations on the particular Conduct of the Persons. The Design of this work being rather to instruct other Families, than to reproach those who may think themselves concern'd: The Author leaves these Dialogues therefore without particular Remarks, and leaves room for abler Hands to Annotate upon them hereafter, when the Persons concern'd may be gone off the Stage, and then it may rather appear as a general Reproach to those that are guilty, than a particular Satyr upon Persons or Families; which he conceives will also tend more to the Usefulness of the Work.

End of the Fourth Dialogue.

THE

The Fifth

DIALOGUE.

THE last Dialogue is a kind of a *Sketch* or Draught of the whole Family we are speaking of. The eldest *Son* and *Daughter*, as their Father and Mother had suggested, being grown up in a long allow'd Course of Looseness in Behaviour, all manner of Liberties having been given them, without any Family-Restraint, *without Government*, and rather encourag'd by their Parents, *than limited* either by Example or Command, prov'd, *as might well be expected*, very obstinate and refractory, *especially the Daughter*, who being Hot and Insolent, her Mother, *at the first Attempt*, was so provok'd as to use her somewhat roughly: The other Children, who were grown up, *being also a Son and a Daughter*, are not only brought to submit to the Reformation proposed by their Parents, but embrace it with willingness and chearfullness, and make their Duty be their Choice, to the great Satisfaction of their Parents.

The

The following Dialogue is between the Father and Mother with their said *Sons* and *Daughters* respectively, *and apart*, which are the same that are referred to in the former Discourses.

The Mother, it seems began with her eldest Daughter upon something in her Behaviour about breaking the Sabbath, and this by the Imprudence of the Daughter, ended rougher than she [*the Mother*] design'd it.

The Father began with his *second Son*, and finding him very tractable, proceeded to his eldest Son, but met with great Difficulties and Discouragements in him.

The Mother found the *second Daughter* sensibly affected with her Discourse, and chearfully willing to submit to her Instructions, which was a great Comfort to her, and encourag'd her to deal the better with her Obstinate Sister.

Their other Children were younger, and rather to be govern'd by Authority than Perswasion. The Dialogue with the eldest Daughter *began thus:* After Sermon, every Lord's-Day, it had been their Custom to walk Abroad, or go to the Park, or a Visiting, *and so to wear off the Evening*, and then come Home to Supper; but the Case being now alter'd, *the Father* had let the Servants know they must all stay at Home, and had told his Younger Son, with whom he had discoursed in the Morning, that he would have no more going to the Park on the Lord's-Day; but the Daughter had not yet heard of it, nor the eldest Son, *or if they had*, they did not believe their Father was in Earnest; so that according to their usual Custom, they were preparing

ring to go abroad, and *the Son* had bid their Coachman get ready to carry them out; the Mother perceiving the Daughter to be putting on her Gloves, calls to her thus:

Mother. WHat are you Dressing for, *Child?*
Daughter. To go to the Park, Madam.
Mo. I would not have you go to Night, *my Dear.*
Dau. Why, Madam?
Mo. I have a Reason which I had rather tell you another time.

[Note, *the Mother having design'd to have a serious Discourse with her Daughter, did not think fit to enter into Particulars now, but her Daughter's Carriage forc'd her to it.*

Dau. I must go, *Madam*, I have appointed Company.
Mo. Well, however disappoint them for once *at my desire.*
Dau. It's impossible, *Madam*, I can't do it.
Mo. O, the Impossibility is not so very great as you make it; *I warrant you*, you can excuse it.
Dau. I never did such a thing in my Life; *'tis rude, Madam, to the last degree*, I cannot look my Lady —— in the Face.
Mo. Lay the Fault on me, *my dear*, I'll bear the Blame.
Dau. I'll e'en lay the Fault on no body, nor ask no body Pardon, *but go my self.*
Mo. I wonder, *Child*, you should force me to the Necessity of telling you, *that you must not go.*
Dau. Why, Madam, I must go, I can't put it off.

Mo. But I tell you, *Mistress*, since you will be put off no other way, you shall not go.

Dau. Shan't I?

Mo. *No*, you shan't.

Dau. But, *I will go.*

Mo. I never thought to have had such Language as that *from you, Daughter*, and I assure you I shall not take much of it.

Dau. Why should I not go out then, *as well now* as at another time.

Mo. *Why, Daughter*, since I must come to Particulars with you, I assure you, that you shall not only *not go* to the Park *to Day*, but never any more of a Sabbath-Day, as long as I have the troublesome Office *of being your Mother*.

Dau. What have I done, to be used so?

Mo. Nothing more than the rest, *nor was I blaming you*; but you have been all guilty of prophaning the Lord's Day! and to the best of my Power you shall do it no more.

Dau. Why, han't you done it *your self*? And have you not always gone with us?

Mo. Tho' that is very unnatural, and unmannerly in you to reproach me with it, yet I confess, it is but too just upon me, *and I deserve it*; however, I pray God forgive me, *that I have done it*, and above all, that I have let you all do it; well may you upbraid me with it, *and I desire to be ashamed* that you have had my Example to encourage you to it; but it is the more my Duty to reform it, and I expect your Compliance with the more willingness.

Dau. I see no harm in it, not I.

Mo. What, not on the *Lord's Day!*

Dau.

Dau. No, as long as Sermon is over, and Church is done.

Mo. Why, does not the Commandment say, *Remember the Sabbath-day to keep it holy, and therefore God blessed the Sabbath-day, and HALLOWED it.*

Dau. Why, don't I keep it *Holy enough?* don't I go to Church every Sunday?

Mo. Well, and what, do you think the Sabbath-Day is over when you have been at Church?

Dau. Over! Why, what would you have us do after we have been at Church?

Mo. I shall take a Time to let you know what is your Duty on the rest of the Day; but I did not design to talk of that now, *nor of this neither*, if you had not mov'd me to it by your undutiful Language.

Dau. I don't trouble my self about it.

[*Here the Daughter turns away, and with a kind of a humming-low Voice*, sings *the Tune of* a new *Playhouse* Song.

Mo. Unsufferable Insolence! Have I been telling you of the Command of God to keep holy the Sabbath day, and of my Resolution to do it my self, *and to cause you to do it*, and do you despise God and your Mother at this rate! *it is not to be born with.* [*She first apparently laughs at her Mother, and turning away from her, sings on.*

Mo. Your Contempt of your Mother *I place to my own Account*; but for your Contempt of your Maker, *Take that* on God's Account.

[*Strikes her a Box on the Ear.*

Dau. Ha! Is it come to that!

[*The Daughter flies away in* a Rage, *and goes up Stairs towards her Chamber.*

Mo. Only take this with you in your Fury, *That I'll have no going out of Doors.*

Dau. But I will, for all this.

Mo. I adviſe you to provoke me *no farther.*

Dau. You have done your worſt.

[*The Mother provok'd highly by her Tongue,* follows her, *and goes into her Chamber, but ſhe had gone into another Room, and the Mother ſeeing the Cloſet-door open, in her Chamber, goes in, and takes away* all her Books, *PLAYS, SONGS,* &c. *leaving only her* Bible, Prayer-books, *and two or three good Books in their room.*

Mo Theſe are the curſed Roots from whence this bleſſed Fruit grows up! Here's her Sabbath-Days Study! and the Bait to all her Pleaſures! Theſe ſhall be the firſt Sacrifice to the bleſſed Reſolution I have taken *of reforming my Family.*

[*The Mother brings them all down Stairs, and after looking over the Particulars, threw them all into the Fire.*

The Daughter going afterwards into her Chamber, and finding what her Mother had done, occaſioned the Dialogue already ſet down, between her and her eldeſt Brother.

This little Adventure being over, and the Mother having compoſed herſelf, ſhe ſends for her

second Daughter, about fifteen Year old, and begins the following Dialogue with her.

Mother. Child, where are you? *What*, are you beſpoke to Night too?

2d *Daughter. No Madam*, who ſhould beſpeak me?

Mo. Why, your *Siſter*, to go to the Park.

2 *Dau.* No indeed, *Madam*, I know nothing of it, and *if ſhe had*, I have no Inclination to it.

Mo. How ſo?

2 *Dau.* I don't know, but *I never cared for it a Sundays*, but when you go, and every body, *and then I muſt.*

Mo. Dear *Child*, don't cut me *to the Heart*, by telling me of my going! Your *Siſter* has upbraided me with it juſt now, in her Paſſion and Fury, but your innocent Way of telling me of it, *ſinks deeper ſtill.*

2 *Dau. Upbraid you, Madam!* It's impoſſible! I hope *my Siſter* is not gone mad; ſure you won't call my ſpeaking ſo, upbraiding you with any thing, *I abhor it.*

Mo. But, *my dear*, I upbraid my ſelf with it.

2 *Dau.* God forbid I ſhould do it, *dear Mother*; but was there any harm in your going?

Mo. Only the wickedeſt thing *in me*, that I was capable of doing; eſpecially, as it was an Example to you, *my dear*, and to your Brothers and Siſters.

2 *Dau.* But if it was a wicked thing, *Mother*, it was ſo in me too, was it not?

Mo. Moſt certainly.

2 *Dau.* I cannot tell what it was, but I had al-

ways some Uneasiness when I was out in the Park, or a Visiting *on the Sabbath day*; but I consider'd *my Mother* was with me, and sure it could not be wrong *THEN*, and that carried me on; but, *dear Mother*, do not call this upbraiding you with it; *it would break my Heart* to have you think so.

Mo. I don't, *my dear*, but I cannot help upbraiding my self with it, though no body in the World was to upbraid me with it; for I have run the risque of ruining thee, *my dear*, and all the rest of my Children, both *Soul* and *Body*, and I am afraid some of them are quite ruined already.

2 *Dau.* I won't be one of them, *Mother*, I'll do any thing you shall direct me to.

Mo. I would be glad to direct you for the best, *my dear*, but the Work has been so long neglected, *I am almost discouraged*, and know not *where to begin*, nor how to hope for Success.

2 *Dau.* Why, *dear Mother*, I hope I am not so hard to be instructed, or so backward to learn; I am sure I am willing to change my course of Life for a better, *not only* out of Obedience to you, *as you are my Mother*, but out of meer Inclination and Choice; for I have often thought we were not in the Way *to do our selves good*, and that the Life we led, *was not* as it should be.

Mo. I thank God for that Foundation laid in thee, *my dear*, and hope the Rules for Amendment will be the more agreeable.

2 *Dau.* *Dear Mother*, all your Rules shall be agreeable to me, but more especially, such Rules as shall deliver me from *the Evil* of an irregular Life; sure I cannot be so ungrateful as to neg-

lect

neglect the Directions you shall give, so much to our own Advantage.

Mo. My dear, it is true, that *bare amendment of Life* is not all the Duty that is before us; it is not enough that we forbear the Follies which we have so long committed, but we must perform the Duties we are commanded; a Christian's Life consists, as well in discharging commanded Duties, as in avoiding forbidden Evils, *BOTH* must be done, and *BOTH* submitted to chearfully.

2 *Dau.* I have been uneasie a great while, at the Life we live, I always thought it was not right, but I did not know what Course to take *to alter it*, nor what I ought to do, *or not to do*; besides, *I thought* if I should refuse going to the Play, and refuse going Abroad *on the Sabbath day*, I should anger *you*, *Madam*, for I always found *you were for them*, and yet I cannot say I took any Pleasure in them; but saw other Families *did not do so*, and I thought they *look'd soberer*, and *liv'd better* than ours; I thought my self in Heaven *last Winter*, when you let me stay at my Aunt's a few Weeks.

Mo. And yet these are the very things *your Sister calls* the Pleasure of her Life.

2 *Dau.* Much good may they do her.

Mo. And puts so much Value upon them, *that* she will affront her Mother at any time, *rather than* deny herself the least Satisfaction of that kind.

2 *Dau.* She shall have *all my Share* in the Pleasure at a very low Price.

Mo. Indeed, she provoked me *just now* to the highest Degree; when I saw her preparing to go to the Park, and desired her to put it off; she told

told me, *'twas impossible*, and her Honour was engag'd, because, *forsooth*, she had made an Appointment to meet the young Lady *Lighthead.*

2 *Dau.* Her Honour engag'd! What, her Honour engag'd to break God's Commandments! *Sure*, *Madam*, you did not tell her, *as you do me*, that it was a breach of the Sabbath, and a breach of the *fourth Commandment*, *Remember that thou keep holy the Sabbath-day.*

Mo. Yes, *I did*, *several times*; and when, *at last*, I added my own Authority, and told her, *she should not go*, she told me flat and plain, *she would go.*

2 *Dau.* I am amaz'd!

Mo. Nay, I ought not to wonder; *for* when she had laugh'd at its being a breach of God's Command, *how could I expect* she would lay any weight upon mine.

2 *Dau. It is impossible!* Certainly she could never do it in Contempt of the Commandment, she must rather pretend it was Lawful, and that it did not break the Command.

Mo. No, *my dear*, no body breaks the Commandments of God avowedly, and obstinately, *as God's Command*; no body is so absurdly wicked *as to say*, I will break God's Commandments in defiance of him; but she pretended there was *no harm in it*, because *Sermon was done*, as if God, who hallowed the Sabbath day, had only hallowed *so much of it* as was taken up in the publick Worship, and no part of the Sabbath was to be kept holy *but the Sermon-time.*

2 *Dau.* That's the Divinity of the Day, *Madam.*

Mo. Nay, and which is still more ridiculous,

as if one part of the Day being dedicated *to the best things*, the worst were to come *just in the Heels* of them; I must own, I think People had better *open their Shops* as soon as Sermon is done, and fall to their Business *every Sabbath Evening*, for *sure* it would be less Sin to spend the Day in Lawful Employments, *than in Sports and Recreations*, Worship and Diversion is putting the *two Extreams* next to one another; and it seems a Contempt of the Day, to set one piece of it apart *for the best things*, and the other *for the meanest*, for Recreation is the meanest lawful thing that can be done; but your Sister thinks her Pleasure the reason of her Life, and the end for which she was born.

2 *Dau.* Then she seems to be born for very little Purpose; I hope I am born for something else, *Madam.*

Mo. Yes, *she thinks* seeing and reading *Plays*, Company, Visits, the Park, and the *Mall*, such material Points of Life, and so essential to her Happiness, that she will not only contradict my Authority, *but God's Command*, rather than not enjoy them.

2 *Dau.* I know Plays and Romances have been too much *my Sister's study*, and *mine too*, but I confess I see nothing in them *now* so diverting as I have thought of them; *but if I did*, if I thought it was displeasing to you, *Mother*; more, *if I thought* it was an Error, or an Enemy to Religion and Vertue, I would soon let you see what my real Value for them is.

Mo. How dear they are to your Sister, *you will know to her just Reproach*, when you come to hear

hear how she treats me *for taking them from her*, and how dear they are to me, *you may guess* by my having put them into the Fire just now.

2 *Dau.* I am sorry for my *Sister*, and especially, *dear Mother!* that you should meet with so much Affliction in your Children; but depend upon it, *Madam*, you shall meet with nothing from me, *to add to it*; and as to Play-Books and Novels, I hope, if they were no way offensive on a Religious Account, *I could sacrifice them all* to give Satisfaction to my Mother.

Mo. My dear, can you do so!

[*The Mother weeps for Joy.*

2 *Dau.* I'll soon put you out of that Doubt *Madam*, if you'll have Patience till I fetch them.

[*She runs up Stairs to her Closet.*

Mo. Well, how said my Husband *to me*, that if we began this Work heartily, it would perhaps be blessed and succeeded *from Above* beyond our Expectation! How does *this dear Child* close chearfully with the very first Notion of a Reformation! *Who knows*, but God *in time* will mollify the Obstinacy of *her Sister!* This shall, however, encourage me *to go on* with my Work, *to continue* instructing and exhorting her, and not despair of a Blessing, *tho* the Difficulties, by reason of a long Delay and Neglect, have been doubled upon me.

[*The Daughter returns with a Servant, and their Laps both full of* Songs, Plays, Novels, Romances, *and such like Stuff, and throws them down on the Table.*

2 *Dau. Here, Madam*, is the willingest Sacrifice ever I made in my Life.

Mo.

Mo. And do you do this freely, my Dear!

2 *Dau.* With more Pleasure, *Madam*, than ever I read them, and I resolve them to the Fire.

Mo. I think, my dear, thou art the only qualified Person to be trusted with them, because *if there be any such thing as good in them*, which I will not say there is, *thou alone* art able to pick it out *without* touching, or being tainted with the bad; of tasting what has any Relish, without being *soil'd* with the Dirt, *or infected* with the Disease of the other.

2 *Dau. Well, Madam!* but were I so capable, I am not above being entic'd, and besides, other of my *Brothers* and *Sisters* may make *my* Example *their* Rule, or may claim to use them, tho' in my Possession; I had rather have them follow my Sister's, and therefore make it my Desire, *Madam*, in order to put an Argument into your Mouth *from my Example*, that I may put them all into the Fire with my own Hand. [*She throws them in.*

Mo. The Blessing of thy Father and Mother be upon thee, *my dear Child!* Thou hast made my Heart rejoice, *that was almost sunk before*, for fear lest all my Children were irrecoverably lost, by my neglect of their more early Instruction.

2 *Dau. My dear Mother!* I am happier in that Blessing, than all that ever you gave me before.

Mo. What wilt thou say, my Dear, to thy *Sister*, when she hears of it?

2 *Dau.* Nay, *Madam*, what will my Sister say *to me*, when she shall know that I have heard how she us'd *my Mother* for a few *Ballads* and *Play-Books.*

Mo. She will mock and flout at thee, *my dear.*

2 *Dau.*

2 *Dau.* Then I'll pity her *Mother*, for I am sure she is in a worse Condition *than I*; I have your Blessing and Affection, *Madam*, which I value above all the World, and she has a heap of *Plays* and *Novels* in the room of it.

Mo. My Blessing, *my dear!* Alas, what is that! May He be thy Blessing, whose Blessing *maketh rich, and adds no Sorrow to it*; if God gives thee Grace to go on, thou wilt be a Blessing to me, rather than I to thee; for I have been the Cause of all thy Ruin, and the danger of your being never recalled for want of instructing you before.

2 *Dau.* *Dear Mother!* do not load your self with that; *I hope* it is not too late for us to learn now.

Mo. It is very late, *my dear*, very late! and what would have been easily taught, and easily learnt *before*, will be hard now *both ways*; I fear thy Dear, you do not see what other things are necessary to be done.

2 *Dau.* What things are they, *Madam?*

Mo. Why, my dear, on our Part, *thy Father and I*, we must set up a Family Government entirely new; *we must* be angry *now* at what we were pleas'd at *before*, and pleas'd now with what we were angry at *before*; what we laugh'd at, and made a jest of in our Children before we must *now* mourn over, and correct them for what we not only allow'd to be done, *but* even *did our selves before*, we must forbid *now*; what we accounted pleasant *before*, must be frightful *now*; and what we delighted in *before*, must be dreadful to us *now: IN SHORT*, every part of our Government, or of our Children's Obedience

must

nuſt be alter'd. O the Task that I have to go hrough! O the difficulty of a late Reformation n a Family!

2 *Dau.* I cannot underſtand what all this migh- y Change muſt be, *Madam*, or wherein there will be ſo much difficulty; *ſure* none of the Family can be backward to liſten to ſuch Directions *as you will give them*; will any of my *Brothers* and *Siſters* be againſt being made better, or render your Task difficult, when it may be made *ſo eaſie*, and when ſo much for their own good; I am ſure I will not, *Mother*.

Mo. I know the Mortification muſt be great on your Side too, I mean, *all of you*; it is not an eaſie thing to bring Children off from their Levities, and Pleaſures, which are become ſo Natural to them, by a long uninterrupted Allowance of their Parents and Governours; *nay*, it is not eaſie for Children themſelves to bring their Humours and Inclinations, Fancies and Paſſions, off from the Pleaſures of Life; which perhaps they have, *as all mine have*, had an unreſtrain'd Enjoyment of; *the Work is very hard*, my dear.

2 *Dau.* I believe it will not be half ſo hard *to me* to deny my ſelf any, or all of thoſe Diverſions, and criminal Enjoyments you ſpeak of, *Mother*, as to guide my ſelf to thoſe things which are neceſſary to be done, or engag'd in *afterwards*.

Mo. My *dear*, a Religious Converſation is not the eaſieſt thing in the World.

2 *Dau.* *But*, I believe it is the pleaſant'ſt thing in the World, *Mother*.

Mo. Child, I wonder to hear thee ſay ſo, for thou haſt never ſeen any thing of it *at Home*,

2 *Dau*,

2 *Dau.* 'Tis *true*, I have not *at Home*, but I have *Abroad*, *Madam*; when you sent me to my Aunt's, where you know I was nine or ten Weeks, I thought I was in Heaven there, *to what* I was at Home; every thing *there* was *so* sober, *so* pretty, *so* grave, *so* exact, and *so* regular, and yet *so* chearful, *so* pleasant, *so* innocently merry, and *withal*, *so* pious, and *so* religious, that I thought nothing so happy in my Life; nor did I ever spend so many Weeks so well in my Life.

Mo. Child, Your Aunt is a Dissenter, you know.

2 *Dau. But Madam*, my Uncle is a *Churchman*; and let them be which they will, *I see no difference* in their Conversation, they all agree to be a religious, sober, pious *Family:* The Children are all under such Government! do all things *so prettily*, and their Behaviour is *so agreeable*, they love one another *so entirely*, and enjoy one another *so perfectly*, that I believe they are the Pattern of all the Town: *My Uncle* every Night and Morning calls them all together to Prayers: *My Aunt* takes all her Daughters together *once a Day*, and makes one of them read a Chapter, and then she says any thing she has occasion to them, by way of *Reproof* or *Direction*; and I observ'd when I went up Stairs *at Night*, not one of my Cousins would go to Bed *till* they had retir'd into their Closets to say their Prayers *by themselves.*

Mo. Poor Child! That was a strange way of Life *to thee*, I believe.

2 *Dau.* I thought it strange, indeed, *at first*, but I was soon able to recollect my self, and *was*

asham'd

sham'd to let them know that I thought it strange, *much less* that I did not do so my self.

Mo. Poor Child! If thou had'st been taught, *as well as they*, thou would'st have done so *too.*

2 *Dau. Indeed, Madam*, as I was almost left alone, I could not *but say my Prayers* too; and this kind of Life began to be so pleasant and agreeable to me, that I never enjoy'd my self *like it* in all my Life.

Mo. And did'st thou not think thy Father's Family *a kind of Hell* when thou cam'st home again, *my Dear?*

2 *Dau. No, Madam*, I confess it was odd *at first*, when, instead of a regular Family, I came Home to all manner of Looseness, and Liberty; but it *soon began* to be Natural to me again, and I forgot my good Aunt's Instructions, *ay*, and my Uncle's too, who us'd to say a great many good things to me, and give me a great deal of good Advice.

Mo. How seldom is good Instruction lost, or thrown away! I am perswaded, the little good Advice *they gave thee*, was the Foundation of that willingness to be govern'd and reform'd, *which appears in thee now*; my Blessing on her Heart for doing thee so much good!

2 *Dau.* I believe it has done me no harm, *Madam.*

Mo. How then would good Instruction have wrought upon thee, if *I had begun it* ten or twelve Year ago!

2 *Dau. Dear Mother*, I hope it is not too late.

Mo. Well, *my dear*, how do they spend *the Sabbath* at your Aunt's? *Not as we do*, I dare say!

2 *Dau. No indeed, Madam*, after quite another Fashion:

Fashion: The young Ladies are oblig'd to be down Stairs half an hour after Nine *in the Morning*, ready dress'd; then *my Uncle* calls to Prayers, and soon after, *they go all away*, either to the Church, or to the Meeting house; but *whichsoever it is*, they are *almost sure* to meet together after Sermon, sometimes at the very door, and then *Children* and *Servants*, not one stirs from Home: *In the Evening* my Uncle calls them *all together*, reads to them in some good Book, and then sings Psalms, and goes to Prayers; *when that is over*, they go to Supper, *then* they spend an Hour *perhaps or two* in the most innocent, and the most pleasant Discourse and Conversation imaginable, it is always about something Religious; *and then* every one retires to their Appartments, and the young Ladies spend their Time in their *Closet devotions* till they go to Bed.

The Sons, *you know*, Madam, are grown up, and those young Gentlemen are the very Picture of their Father, sober, vertuous, religious, and modest, and yet are really Gentlemen, and behave themselves as much like Geutlemen as any Men do: *dear Mother*, when I came home, *and heard* my Brother *damn* the Coachman, and *curse* the Maids; *when I heard* the Noise, the Clamour, the prophane Words that our Servants have in their daily Conversation, *it amaz'd me*; I thought at first, all Gentlemen had been like my Brother, but I was soon convinc'd when I had been a while at my *Aunt's*.

Mo. All this, *my dear*, is the Consequence of the differenne of Education, and all signifies, *my dear*, that your Aunt has done *her duty*, and I have

have not done, *mine*, nothing else has made the difference indeed, God's Grace excepted.

2 *Dau. Dear Mother*, do not afflict your self with what is past, *sure* none of us will be such refractory Creatures, as to resist *your good Design* of reforming us now.

Mo. O it's *too late* to bring your Brothers to any Government now.

2 *Dau.* I hope not, *Madam*; if they are grown up, and thereby may think themselves past Government, yet *sure* they are not past Perswasion: They may want Judgment *when little*, and are therefore rather to be taught by Compulsion and Correction, but as they are now Masters of more Reason, *so* they will the sooner submit to the Affectionate Perswasions of a tender *Father* and *Mother*; especially in a thing so apparently *and convincingly* for their own good, *Soul* and *Body*.

Mo I have a great deal of reason to fear the contrary, *as well* in your *Sister* as in your *Brothers*.

2 *Dau* I think *my Sister* is passionate, and very fond of Pleasure *and Gayety*, but, *Madam*, Time and your Authority, *I hope*, will prevail upon her to reflect upon her own *Interest* as well as *Duty*.

Mo Go to her, *my dear*, and see if you can work any thing upon her.

2 *Dau. Alass*, *Madam!* I shall be a very simple Instructor *to her*, who thinks herself so wise! She reckons me *but a Child*, fitter to come to School *to her*.

Mo. A less Child than you, *my dear*, has been my Instructor; why may not you be *hers*.

2 *Dau.* I'll visit her, *Madam*, but I question whether she will speak to me, for I know she is in a great Passion.

Mo. Well, go, and bid her come down into the Parlour, here's your *Father* a coming; tell her your *Father* and *I* want to speak with her.

2 Dau. Yes, *Madam.*

[*She goes up to her Sister.*

THIS Dialogue chiefly discovers the Difference of two Families: One religiously Educated, faithfully Instructed and Taught both by the Care and Example of the Heads of the Family; the other abandon'd to the Gust of their own Inclinations, and let loose in the pursuit of their Pleasures, without any regard to their present Duty, or future Happiness.

The Benefit the young Lady receiv'd in the religious Family of her Aunt, and the Effects of it, show us, 1. How pleasant a Religious Life, when duly conform'd to, and willingly comply'd with, appears to be; and, 2. What convincing Force it has in it, even upon the Minds of those who have no Part in it themselves.

End of the Fifth Dialogue.

The Sixth

DIALOGUE.

WHILE the Mother was *thus* managing her Daughters, the Father was as much engag'd with his *Two Sons*, and his Hardships were *every jot* as great as the Mother's, and his Encouragements the same too.

It is to be observ'd here, that the Difficulty in this Part of Education of Children does not lie so much in the Question what to teach them, and *what Principles* of the Christian Religion to go upon, as to bring them by Reasoning and Argument to be *teachable*, to perswade them that they have any Occasion to learn, or that any are capable of teaching them, and to cause them *to submit* to Instruction in general.

The Father call'd his *Second Son* up to him on a Sabbath-Day in the Morning, before he came down Stairs, and taking him into his Closet, began this Dialogue with him: The Son you are to suppose had been bred a Gentleman, and a Scholar, was about seventeen or eighteen Years of Age, and was newly come from the University.

The Father begins thus:

Father. SON, I suppose you know what Day *this is.*

Son. Yes, Sir.

Fa. But, perhaps you do not know *that not you only*, but all the Family, *my self not excepted*, have never taken a due Notice of *the Sabbath-day*, or of the Manner in which we ought to behave on that Day: The Duty appointed for the Day has been too much neglected; above all, the great Duty of setting it apart for the Worship and Service of God, and keeping the *Sabbath day* holy.

Son. I remember *the fourth Commandment*, Sir.

Fa. Yes, we can all repeat the Commandments by rote, and do every Day *at Church* say them over and over; but the little Regard we have shown to them *in the Week*, is too plain a Proof of our thinking but little of what we say; for, *God knows*, in *my House* there has been little difference between a *Sabbath-day* and *another Day*, unless it be, that the *Sabbath-day* has been spent the worst of the two; for excepting our just going to the *Church*, which also is made a meer Diversion, and *a kind* of Entertainment, *all the rest* is spent in meer revelling, feasting, visiting, and either riding Abroad, or Mirth and Gayety at Home; and this is so Notorious, *more in my Family than in any other*, that I am sensible it is *high time* to put a Stop to it, and I design to tell you all my Mind this Evening, that the Reformation may be effectual: I hope none of my Children will oppose their own Good.

Son. I hope not, Sir.

Fa.

Fa. Nay, if they oppose me *never so much*, I am resolv'd of this; if they will be foolish and wicked, they shall be *foolish* and *wicked* for themselves, not *for me*, nor for any body else; *for my part*, when I look back upon my Family, and consider how we have liv'd hitherto, I wonder that the Judgments of God have not distinguish'd *my Family*, and made us as publick, and as much the Amazement of the World for *our Punishment*, as we have been Notorious for *our Sin*; and therefore if it were only for the Fear of the Hand of Heaven, *though I hope I act from another Principle too*, I think it concerns me to set about a Family-Reformation with all possible Diligence and Application.

Son. Indeed I never consider'd it, Sir, *till of late*, but for some time past I have begun to see, we have not been right: *It is true*, we do not live as other Families do, *and I have often thought so*, but perhaps not with so much Concern as I should have done.

Fa. Well, Child, my Design of altering it will be so much the more agreeable to you *then*, when you come to practise it.

Son. If it were not, yet Sir, it shall be the more agreeable to me if it is your Command.

Fa. I would not command any thing that should not be agreeable, if it were not absolutely necessary; but in things indispensibly our Duty, the Humours of any Side are of no weight at all, and the Duty must be considered, rather than the Inclination of those who are to perform it.

Son. I am not only inclin'd to obey it, *for its being your Command*, Sir, but my own Inclination

concurs to set about any thing that will rectifie my Life, and teach me to govern my self according to my Duty.

Fa. What you say, *Child*, is very obliging, *as it relates to me*, and as I have always shew'd you by my own Conduct in your Education, that I have entertain'd a particular Affection to you more than to the rest of your *Brothers* and *Sisters*, so this Return is so *very pleasing* to me, that I cannot but tell you I will not forget to shew it you; and that I think my self very highly engag'd by it to distinguish you in my Affection, and in my Concern for you, as you have distinguish'd *your self* in your Duty and Regard to me on this Occasion; but the readiness you shew to this Work of Reformation, from an Inclination to the thing it self, is a Particular which I rejoice in, and *love you for*, with an Affection which I was not Master of before: But, *tell me Child*, whence came this Inclination? How first came any Thoughts into your Mind about it? *I am sure* I have never before spoken a Word about Religion to you in my Life.

Son. I won't say so, Sir.

Fa. A, but I have too much Cause to *say so*, and I am convinc'd I have not only fail'd of my Duty, for which I heartily beg Pardon of Almighty God, but have been Injurious to you, *Child*, and to all my Children, in not furnishing you with the Knowledge of your Duty when you were Young, and giving you early Instruction, *by which* much of the Follies of your Lives might have been prevented, all the Time you have now misspent had been say'd, and you had all been long ago what now,

now, I doubt, you will not obtain without great difficulty to me and your selves.

Son. I am sorry to see you afflict your self, *Sir*, about that; I hope it shall not be too late still.

Fa. But, *if not too late*, the Work is double, the Task hard, the Attempt almost desperate, and the Success very doubtful.

Son, *Dear Sir*, You shall have no Difficulty *with me*, I am entirely resolv'd to be guided by your Instructions, to follow your Rules, obey your Dictates, and submit wholly to your Direction, let the Difficulty be what it will to me; and therefore I only desire to know what *the first Steps* are you would have me take.

Fa. The first Steps, *my Dear*, are the breaking off the ill Practices of our Family, and the regulating the House by the Rules of Vertue, Sobriety, and a Christian Life; things we have all been Strangers to *here*.

Son. This, *Sir*, is that which I told you before I had an Inclination to formerly, and 'tis with a great deal of Pleasure I shall close with all your Schemes of that kind; because it is some time ago since I have seen and observ'd, That *as I thought* we did not live like Christians, but rather like Heathens; and that other Families were quite another sort of People than we; and I could not but be in love with them, and weary of ours: For *I cannot but think*, that Nature it self dictates *to a Man of Sence*, that a Life of Vertue and Sobriety is more agreeable to us, *as Men*, than a vicious, wicked, profligate Course, which ever, *not only* ruins the Estate, the Conscience, the

Health, and the Good Name of the Person, but even his Reputation *as to the World* also.

Fa. I was asking you before what first rais'd these just Reflections in you, *my Dear*, for as I acknowledged then, *I say again*, I own, thou art not beholding to me for them.

Son. The first Hints I had of this kind, Sir, were a great while ago, from some accidental Conversation with Mr. - - - - our Neighbour, when we were little Children.

Fa. What, the Old Gentleman?

Son. No, *the Young*; and afterwards with his Mother, when after our usual Recreations he carried me home to their House.

Fa. How was it, *Child?* for I long to hear the Story: If any good Person has *help'd me* to do my Work, or *done it for me*, I shall be very thankful.

Son. No, Sir, not much of that; but when I first began to play with that young Gentleman *some Years ago*, his Mother heard me use some *ugly Words*, such as I was but too much given to then, and sending her Son away, *the Old Lady* took me into her Parlour, and gave me Sweetmeats, and ask'd me a great many Questions.

Fa. What Questions?

Son. She ask'd me, if ever I was taught *to swear*; I answer'd, *NO*: She ask'd me, if my Father would not chide me if he heard me Swear; *I told her*, *NO*; but I was sorry for it, Sir, *for I presently thought* that to say so, reflected upon my Father, whether it was true or no, and that I ought to have said, *Yes, he did*, tho' it was not true.

Fa. Dear Child! the Sin was mine, and the Shame

Shame of its being True ought to be mine, and shall for Ever be mine; *I am glad* thou did'st not speak a false thing to her: *What said she then?*

Son. She did not say much to me *the first time*, but only she told me 'twas a sad thing that a pretty Boy, *as she said I was*, should be ruin'd; and *I thought* I saw her weep.

Fa. Did you see her again after that?

Son. Yes, Sir, She got me in again *the next Day*, and gave me more *Sweet meats*, and ask'd me several Questions about *God* and *Heaven*, and I was sadly asham'd I could answer her *to nothing at all*, for I knew nothing of it but what I had *heard by chance*, or *learn'd by rote:* She ask'd me if I was willing to know any thing for my own good in another World; and I told her, *Yes, with all my Heart*: She told me, if I would come and visit *her Son* every day, she would use me like *her own Child*; but she desired me to promise her one thing *before-hand*; I said, *I would promise her any thing she pleased*; then she said, I must promise her not *to swear*, nor take *God's Name in vain*: She told me, *that* I was *a Gentleman*, and my Father and Mother were Persons of Distinction; *that* it was not only a Sin against God, but below me, *as a Gentleman*, *to Swear*, and *use ill Words*; *that* if I should Swear when I grew to be a Man, *it would spoil all my Education*, and no sober Man would keep me Company; *that* if I would not leave off Swearing, and taking God's Name in vain, she must not let her Son play with me, for she should be afraid her Son should learn such Words too, *and then* he would be undone.

Fa. And did you promise her, *my dear?*

Son. Yes, Sir, I promis'd her, but I could not forbear crying; and when I got away from her, I could not help crying a great while by my self.

Fa. What did you cry for, when you *came away?*

Son. I cry'd *for shame*, to think I should do any thing that wanted such a Reproof, and *that* it should be counted scandalous, or dangerous for any Children to be permitted to play with me.

Fa. And did it not *make you angry* with the Lady that had reproved you, and *hate her?*

Son. NO, Sir, it made me *love her*, and ever after that, *to this Day*, I have at several times gone to her, and made her long Visits.

Fa. And does she continue to talk to you so, *Child*, still.

Son. Yes, Sir, *to this Hour*, and calls me her Son, and but that I would not dishonour my Mother, I should call her Mother too; *for she has been better than a Mother* to me.

Fa. How did she go on with you?

Son. When she had gain'd my Promise against Swearing, she brought in all the wicked Words I had learnt among our Servants, and made me promise to *leave them all off*; sometimes she would perswade me, otherwhiles give me Money, and other good things; after that, *she ask'd* if I used to pray to *God?* I told her *I said my Prayers:* But, *my dear*, says she, *do you know what Prayer means?* I told her, *yes*, but gave her so weak an Account of it, that she told me very affectionately, *she would tell me* what Prayer was; and after having explained the Meaning of it, she gave me a few short directions *what I should say* when I pray'd,

pray'd, and then told me, I ought to pray to God every Morning and Evening, as the *Jews* offered up their *Morning* and *Evening Sacrifice*, and that God expected such a Worship; and after she had for two or three times talk'd so to me, she made me kneel down by her, and she stood up and prayed *a short time* over me.

Fa. This blessed Woman! what does my Family owe her! *And what did'st thou think of it, Child?*

Son. Truly it made my *very Heart* turn within me *when I heard* a Stranger so earnest in her Prayers to *God* for me, who did not belong to her, and some of her Expressions cut me to the Heart.

Fa. What were they, *Child?*

Son. I fear they will trouble you, *Sir*, if I mention them.

Fa. Well, let me hear them, however.

Son. She prayed that God would supply the want of Instruction to that poor *neglected Child*, and teach him by the powerful Influence of his Spirit; *that* he would give the Knowledge of himself to me, and reveal Christ in my Heart; *that* being taught of God I might believe in him, and believing, *might have Life thro' his Name:* She prayed *that* God would bless her Endeavours to instruct me, tho' I were not committed to her Charge, *and that* I might be convinc'd of Sin, and then converted unto God.

Fa. How can'st thou remember all this?

Son. It is written so deep in my Heart, *dear Father*, I can never forget it *while I live.*

Fa. What Effect had it upon you, *Child?*

Son.

Son. Why Sir, *the Effect was of many kinds.* First I entirely left off all the ill Words I had used *according to my Promise*, and I went about mighty penſive and ſad for ſome time, muſing and conſidering *what my Condition was!* that I was pray'd for as one *neglected* and *abandoned*, and what ſhe meant by the teaching of the Spirit, and what by the work of Conviction, and Converſion *and the like.*

Fa. And how were you informed?

Son. I was then as impatient to be with her *every Day* as ſhe was to have me, and I continually harraſs'd her *with Queſtions* and *Importunities*, and ſhe open'd and explain'd every thing to me *in ſuch a manner*, that I ſoon became able to underſtand the moſt difficult Points in Religion.

Fa. And what Effect had it upon thee, *Child*: did'ſt thou not loſe it all when thou cam'ſt home to thy Father's wicked Family.

Son. No, Sir, *not at all*, I began from that time *to read* the Scriptures, *to pray* by my ſelf, and *to conſider* to what Purpoſe *I was Born*, and what was to befal me in a future State.

Fa. And how long did this laſt, Child?

Son. I thank God it is not wrought out yet, Sir

Fa. And is it poſſible, *my dear Child!* Has there been ſuch a thing *as a Child of mine* praying to God! Has there been a Creature that has thought a Word of Heaven and his Maker in my uninſtructed, prayerleſs Family!

Son. Little enough, Sir.

Fa. And how comes it to paſs neither thy Brothers or Siſters ever heard of it, and that I never heard of it?

Son

Son. I knew they would but *laugh* at me, and *ock me*, and think me *a Fool*, and they have one so, *as it is*, when I would not go with them *Plays*, and to their *Sabbath-day Rambles.*

Fa. Why, *my dear*, was it *you* that refused o go; I always thought they slighted you, and id not care to take you with them, and have een angry with them for it.

Son. No, Sir, they would always have had me ith them, but *I durst not go*, I abhorr'd it.

Fa. How cam'st thou to be against it?

Son. My new Mother always perswaded me gainst it, told me the many Judgments of God hat attended *Sabbath-breaking*, and how many iserable Lives and Deaths took their Beginning t a Neglect of the *Sabbath-day*: She perswaded e too not to go *to Plays* and Balls; and *bade me*, I wanted Diversion when my *Brothers* and *Sisters* were gone to *the PLAY*, I should come nd see her; and that when my *Brothers* and *Sisers* went out to the Park, or a Visiting on the *ord's-day*, I should come thither, and see how ey spent their Time, or go up into my Chamber nd pray to God.

Fa. And did you do so?

Son. Yes, Sir, I went to her almost every *Sabath-day* Evening.

Fa. What, and no body know it?

Son. No, every body thought I had Companions *f my own* to be merry with.

Fa. And so thou had'st, *blessed be God for casting y Lot in such Company*, when thy Father's louse has been a Nest of Prophaneness and Abominations; But how did they spend the Sabbath-ay, *Child*, when you were with them? *Son*,

Son. Very well, Sir, for they are all good People; before Supper they were all call'd down to Prayers; Mr. —— their Father, read a Sermon, and every one of the Children read a Chapter, and then sung Psalms, and then all kneel'd down to Prayers.

Fa. And did you learn to pray *there*, my Dear?

Son. Yes, Sir, Madam - - - - *my new Mother*, us'd to take me, and let me kneel down just in her Hand, *as it were*, and when there was any Word spoken, that she thought I should remember particularly, she would touch my Cheek; and then after Prayer was over, she would tell me *why she did so*, and how that Sentence was proper for me to remember, and to make use of for my self.

Fa. She has been a Mother to thee indeed! A truer Mother than she that bore thee! and has acted a truer Parent to thee, than either thy Father or Mother ever did! God, that inclin'd her Heart *to pity my Children*, double the Blessing of it *upon her own*; I'll go and thank her for it, and acknowledge how little I have done my Duty, and how much of my Work *she has done for me:* But *my dear*, how long ago was this?

Son. Eight or Nine Year, *Sir.*

Fa. And how long did you do so?

Son. All along, *Sir*, till you sent me to the University for a Year and a half, and then I could not, *you know.*

Fa. And have you been to give her Thanks for her Trouble *since you came Home?*

Son. No indeed, Sir, but I have e'en given her new Trouble; for I go to her still every time I can get out, not to be seen, and as often as I can find her at Leisure.

Fa

Fa. Still, *my dear!* Why, what does she teach thee now?

Son. O Sir! I find more Occasion of her, *the more I go to her*; she has taught me all the first Principles of Religion, and, I hope, has put me in a way how to encrease and go forward *in Knowledge* and *Experience*, Piety and Vertue, till I come to be more able to instruct my self *without help*; she is a most excellent Person, and all her Family are like her.

Fa. Indeed they are another kind of Family *than ours is!* Well, go on, *my dear*, and the Lord, that has found out an Instrument to do thee good, *be himself thy Instructor*: As for me, *how I am ashamed!* when I look into my own House, and see what a Soil I have had to plant in, and have neglected to cultivate it; *what Children* would these have been, if I had begun betimes to instruct them! Well, go, *my dear*, it is late, we will talk more of this another time.

Note, the Father was so affected with the Circumstances which his Son had discover'd to him, that he could not contain the Surprize, but retir'd to give vent to his Passions; he found that *God* had taken his Children, *as it were*, out of his Hand; and had supplied the Defect of Instruction, by good People in the Neighbourhood, *as if* he had not been worthy to be *the Instrument* of their Good; and this affected him deeply, as will farther appear in the next Discourse between the Husband and *his Wife*, when they come to talk about it.

End of the Sixth Dialogue.

The Seventh

DIALOGUE.

THE Father had not been so *happily surprized* in his Discourse with his second Son, *in the Morning*, but he is as *unhappily mortified* with the Rencounter he meets with in his Eldest Son, *in the Afternoon:* The Young Gentleman was above Stairs *with his eldest Sister*, as noted in the Fourth Dialogue, when his Father call'd for him, and being a little ruffled in his Humour with the ill Usage, *as he thought it*, that his Mother had given his Sister, he came down with a grave, discompos'd Look, and appear'd not very respectful in his Behaviour: *His Father*, who knew him to be *hot* and fiery in his disposition, was not willing to have been angry, and design'd to treat him, *as will appear*, very kindly but he takes up the Case first, and began with his Father.

Son. SIR, did you forbid *Thomas* letting us have the Coach?

Father. I ordered *in general*, that none of the Servants should stir out to Day.

Son. I thought so, and *told the dog* that I was sure you had not forbid him; I'll break the Rascal's Head this Minute. [*Offers to go out.*

Fa

Fa. Hold, *George*, I must speak with you *first.*

Son. I'll come again, Sir, *immediately.*

[*Offers to go again.*

Fa. *No, no*, I must speak with you *NOW*; it you down, I'll have no body's Heads broke to Day: Don't you know it is *Sabbath day?*

Son. Better Day, *better Deed, Sir*; It's never out of Season to correct a Rascal.

[*Offers to go a third time.*

Fa. *George*, sit down I say, and be easie; perhaps you may be better satisfied *presently*, if you can have Patience.

Son. Sir, *I am satisfied* from your own Mouth, that the Villain not only refused when I order'd him to get the Coach out, but told me *a Lie*, and said you *forbid him*, which I then told him I did not believe, and promised to Cane him if it were not true, and I must be as good as my Word.

Fa. *Well, well*, but let it alone for the present, I say.

Son. I must *and will* beat the Villain, *by*---

[*Swears softly, yet so that his Father overhears him.*

Fa. The Coachman's Usage is not *so rough to you*, but I think yours is *as rude* to your Father.

Son. Why Sir, what do I say? I don't speak disrespectfully to you, Sir; but I speak of this same Fellow.

Fa. *I heard what you said, Sir*, and what you might be sure I did not like; and where-ever you use *such Language*, if you had any respect to your Father, you would not take that Freedom *where I am.*

Son. If it had not been in respect to you, Sir, *why did I speak softly?*

Fa. That was *a seeming* Respect indeed, but you took care I should not be ignorant.

Son. I did not design *you should have heard*; I intended no disrespect.

Fa. Well, sit down here then, and suspend your foolish Passion of the Fellow.

Son. I suppose you don't keep Servants *on purpose* to affront me at that rate.

Fa. If my Son had as much Patience *with his Father*, as he obliges his Father to have *with him* he might have had an Answer to that *before now* but you are too hot for your Father to talk with you, *it seems.*

Son. No Sir, *I am not hot*, but it wou'd provoke any body, to be us'd so by a Servant.

Fa. Then you must turn your Anger *this way* and quarrel with your Father; for the Fellow has done nothing but what I commanded him.

Son. Why, *you said, Sir*, you did not bid him refuse me.

Fa. You must have every thing nicely explain'd to you, *it seems*, I tell you, what he said to you was the natural Consequence of what I order'd *tho' perhaps* the Fellow did not give you the true Reason, *but in general* I had bid him stay at home.

Son He might have said so then.

Fa. No, perhaps I had commanded him otherwise too.

Son I find I am not to know *how it is*, nor what it means; *nor do I care* whether I do or no.

Fa. In time you may.

Son. As you please, *Sir.*

Fa. Well, in this it shall be as I please then but if you had *thought fit* to have come to talk with

with me with less Heat in your Temper, and waited a little till I had spoke what I had to say to you, all your Fury at him, and your Indecency to me, might have been spared.

Son. I did not know what you *sent for me* for.

Fa. And did not design to know it, *I suppose*; for you gave me no Time to speak.

Son. I only told you of the Treatment of the *Coachman*, I have no more to say.

Fa. Then I may take my Turn, I hope: *I shall tell you then*, that I sent for you, as I purpose to do for all your *Brothers* and *Sisters*, to tell you, *That* whereas we have liv'd in an open, profess'd Contempt of *God's* Commands, Prophanation of the *Sabbath day*, and Omission of all Religious Duties, *it is high time* to take up a New Course; *That* I was convinc'd of what was my own Duty as a Father, and a Master of a Family; *that* hitherto the Sin lay too much at my Door, but for the future I would discharge my self better: *That* if my Children would go on, it should no longer be through my Omission, *but their own*: To this Purpose I began with my Servants, who, as soon as I came from Church, I commanded to be all at Home, and that I would have no going Abroad; then I resolv'd to tell my Mind to my Children, who *I expected* would not give me the Trouble of Commanding, or using the Authority of a Father, or Governour, with them; but that I might with Reason and Argument perswade, and with Affection and Tenderness invite them *to a Thing* which must necessarily so far convince their Consciences, as to leave them no room to question *but it was* infinitely for their Advantage, and for their general Good, both *Soul* and *Body*.

Son. I knew nothing of this, Sir.

Fa. Well, *that's true*; but, *as I said*, you might ha' known it before, if you had had Patience, or had thought fit to have given me time to speak to you.

Son. Nay, I do not understand it, *now I do know it.*

Fa. Your Ignorance shall serve you but a short while; you can easily understand this part of it *that* without troubling you with any more of the Reasons of it, I will have none that are under my Roof *Children* or *Servants*, stir out of my Doors on the *Sabbath day*, after Church is done.

Son. You will take it ill perhaps, if your Children should ask you the Reason why they must be so confin'd; and *your Children* will not fail to think it hard to be confin'd so, *and not know the Reason of it.*

Fa. I might with much more Justice insist upon *my undoubted Right to govern my own Family* without giving an Account to my Children *of who I do*; also in a Case so plain as this, *methinks*, they need not seek for a Reason for such an Order *but* since they pretend Ignorance, *let them read* the Commands of God to keep holy the *Sabbath Day.*

Son. Those Commands were as strong *before* as they are *now*, and yet we never were thus confin'd before.

Fa. The worst of that is mine, *Son*, and all that can be said for an Answer to that, *is*, That *BEFORE* I was to blame, and neglected *my Duty*, *NOW* I resolve, God willing, to do my Duty, and neglect it *no longer*, and if it be otherwise

herwise, *they* that are Guilty shall be to blame, *ot I.*

Son. Every body may do their *own Duty* for hemselves.

Fa. But it is my unquestioned Duty, to make ll that are under my Command, *do their Duty.*

Son. I do not desire to be *confin'd.*

Fa. My Desire, *or my Design* was not to *confine* ou, but to perswade you to *confine your self* y the Rules of your Christian Duty; but you ave push'd it farther than I expected, and if you ill not do it your self, I must do it for you.

Son. I hate *to be confin'd*, or to confine *my self.*

Fa. That makes it more my Duty *to confine you*, nd since I think your Business is to *obey*, and ot to *dispute*, I desire no more of your Argu- ents, but expect to see my Orders observ'd, nce I know they are founded upon both *Relig.on* nd *Reason.*

Son. You may oblige us to *stay within*, but ou cannot oblige us to be *willing.*

Fa. Then I must be content with *as much* of our Obedience as *I can get.*

Son. And I hope will expect it *no longer* than hile we cannot help it.

Fa. But will *take Care* that you shall not help *while* you call me *Father*, for I will not bear *e Title* without the *Authority.*

Son. Liberty is a Native Right, *the Brutes ek it*; not a Bird will be in a Cage, if it can e free.

Fa. Liberty *to do Evil* is an abandon'd *Slavery*, he worst of *Bondage*, and Confinement *from ing Evil*, is the only *true Liberty*: But to cut

this Discourse short, I can give Liberty *no longe* to any under my Roof to break God's Command or prophane his *Sabbath*; it is not in my Power if you will not submit to *my Government*, yo must quit *my Dominions*; and as I foresee yo will be forward enough *to carry it high*, you a mistaken if you think I shall wait to be told b you, that you will *go Abroad*, or that you will *n stay* in the Family; for unless you will submit t regulate your Life after a different manner tha you have done, and to receive Advice from you Father for your Conduct, *flatter not your self* wit your Father's Affection, *I'll love* none that *ha God*, nor shelter none of his Rebels, my Doo shall be open to *let you out* when you please.

Son. I care not how soon.

Fa. That's what I expected from you: *A Answer* shall be very plain; you shall be Liberty to go this Hour, *Son*, before the next but take this with you whenever *you go*, that ever you set your Foot *without* the Door on th Account, you never get leave to set your Foo *within* it again, but upon your Knees, an with the humblest Repentance and Submissio both to *God* and your *Father*, for I am not in je with you.

Note, No wise Father ought to suffer himse to be threatned by his Children with goin away from him, but rather to make their b ing thrust from their Parents be the greate Punishment they have to fear.

[*The Father goes out of the Room, bu returns again immediately.*

Fa. I did not expect this Treatment at you Hands, *Son.*

Son

Son. I do not know what you would have me do.

Fa. What I would have you do *is very plain*, and is nothing but what your Duty *to God* requires, *viz.* To submit to the Regulations and Orders which *I shall give* in my Family, *for* the Worship of God, and *for* regulating our Morals, and our way of Living, *and especially*, for restoring a general Face of Religion and Vertue upon our Conversation, that we may, according to the Scripture, *live soberly, righteously and godly in the present evil World*, and not be eminent in the Place we live in for the loosest, and most profligate Family in the whole Neighbourhood.

Son. I think we are *Religious enough*; what should we do more than we do?

Fa. I think my first Work is to let you know what you should *not do*; for if this cannot be obtain'd, *viz.* to refrain from what we do that is *Wrong*, how shall we come to ascertain what is *Right*; and if we know not what Evils *to refuse*, how shall we know what Duties *to perform?*

Son. I know nothing *we do*, that we ought to leave off.

Fa. That is the Reason *why* I bewail so much your want of Instruction and Education, and that I am so willing to retrieve the Loss: I can soon tell you what you should leave off, *viz.* You should leave *prophaning the Lord's Day* in Sports, Diversion, Visiting, riding to the Park, Company, *and the like*, and spend it, as it was appointed to be spent, *IN Acts of Religious Worship*, *IN* hearing and reading God's Word, and *IN* other Duties proper to that Purpose: *Next*, you should leave off the *Playhouses*, and reading

Plays, as not only introductory to Vice, and an extravagant Mispender of Time; but as they lead to engaging in such Society and bad Company, *as will* be destructive to any sober Character in the World. *Thirdly*, that *a general Sobriety* of Behaviour be fix'd upon the whole Scheme of your Conversation, *free from* Passion, ill Words, Swearing, blaspheming God's Name, and from Drunkenness, and all other Excesses: These are *the main Heads* of the Negatives *which I speak of*, and which I desire to be observ'd; and this is *so* just, *so* easie, and *so* equitable, that I cannot but expect, *especially considering how my Children are Circumstanc'd*, a ready Compliance with it; I shall direct you to positive Duties afterwards.

Son. I know not how we are *Circumstanc'd*, or what you would have me understand by *that Word.*

Fa. I find your Temper *is such*, that I am rather to let you know what I expect, *than to hope* for your observing it, and that you will put the Harcship upon me of doing all with you *by force:* This is a Treatment, I think, very disingenuous, and unlike *a dutiful Son*, I am willing to indulge you in every thing that is reasonable and just; but as I am convinc'd what I desire is not only *your Duty*, but *your Interest* to comply with, I therefore cannot Indulge you to your own Ruin; and *for that Reason*, if you will oblige me to use violent Methods to restore you, and to restore my Family, altho' I shall *be sorry for it*, yet as it is my Duty *I must do it*, and I let you know therefore *very plainly* my Resolution, and the Reason of it; if you can give better

Reasons

Reasons why you should not comply with these Things, I am ready to hear them.

Son. What signifies giving *Reasons* against what you resolve to do?

Fa. It might take off the Scandal of Disobedience from you, when you pretend to oppose your Practise to my Directions.

Son. I don't concern my self about Scandals, *not I.*

Fa. You fortifie your self against every thing a Wise Man ought to be concern'd at, and that by a general Negligence of God and Man, *as if* you were unconcern'd for Conscience or Reputation; I hope you don't desire to be known by such a Character.

Son. I dont see that I do *any thing* that deserves Reflection

Fa. Well, come, examine a little; Is your *Lord's-Day Conduct* to be justified? Do you think you keep the Sabbath Day as you ought to do?

Son. Why, Sir, *do I not* go constantly to Church?

Fa. Where do you find in God's Law, that *going to Church* is the Sum of the Sabbath-day Duties: If you can shew me that in the Scripture, *then* I am put to Silence.

Son. I see no harm in taking the Air a little *after Sermon-time.*

Fa. If *Sermon time* be the whole of the *Sabbath-day*, you are in the Right; but then you must prove that the Fourth Commandment should have been Translated thus, *viz. Remember that thou keep holy THE SERMON-TIME on the Sabbath Day.*

Son.

Son. I think there is no need of so much Strictness.

Fa. God and your *Father* are of another Opinion, *or else* neither the Rules of One, or the Discourse of the other are to be credited; I see all your Arguments against these things are only *in general*, that you do not think *thus*, or you do not see *that*; but have you any just Objections against the express Commands of God? If you have, let us hear them.

Son. I do not object against the *Commands of God*, but I do not see, *on the other Hand*, that I break the Commands of *God* in taking a Turn in the Park, or visiting a Friend on a Sunday, *after Sermon.*

Fa. I'll lock up all Argument on that Side *against you*, *THUS*, If you can prove that taking your Pleasure on the *Sabbath-day* is keeping it *holy*, you may justifie your self, *if not*, you cannot, and for that read this Text, *Isa.* 58. 13. *If thou turn away thy Foot from the Sabbath, from doing thy Pleasure on my Holy Day*, &c. There is the Word of God directly against you; would you have any further Authority?

Son. I cannot dispute of these Things.

Fa. They that *cannot dispute*, should not *contradict*; however, I think it my Duty to let all of you know, *that* as I have no reason to doubt but the Command of *God* is clear, *and that* I ought to see it obey'd, I join to it my own Command, *viz. That* in my Family I will have *no more* prophaning the Lord's Day; *no more* going to Plays; *no more* Swearing, Drunkenness, or Immorality whatsoever, if I can help it; and I ex-

expect to be put to as *little Trouble* as possible in having this Order of mine submitted to.

Son. I suppose you may find some Opposition *besides* what you think I shall make, you have more Children than me.

Fa. You have *the less need* to make my Task harder, *and join* with them; however, I am speaking now not *of their Obedience*, now but *yours*.

Son. Perhaps I may obey *as much as they*, but I suppose I may bear the Blame of their standing out.

Fa. If you do well you are sure *to be accepted*, if not, *Sin lies at the Door*; if you are an Encouragement to their Disobedience, you take *your share* of the Guilt, whether it be by Words, or by Example: My Business, *however*, is not *with them* now, but *with you*, and I desire to know *your* Mind, having now told you *what I expect*.

Son. I know not what you would have me *say*; you say you will be obey'd, then *I must obey*, *I think*, I know nothing else to be said; if you will make the House a Monastery, I must turn *Monk*, I think; but nothing is more certain than that we shall all *think it hard*, and think we are not us'd kindly.

Fa. The Commands of God *are not grievous*, nor are my Resolutions *hard* or unjust; *and that* makes the Opposition *which you make*, the more Unnatural: *However*, since you are not to be wrought upon to think it reasonable, I must content my self to take your outward Compliance, whether *willing* or *unwilling*, though I think your Behaviour highly disobliging, and shall always let you know I resent it *as such*.

Son. You will find *A L L* your Children will think it hard as well as I.

Fa.

Fa. That cannot be true, for I know *some of them* to whom God has given more Grace.

Son. I am sure then *others* have not.

Fa. Yes, I know your *Sister* has shown herself, *much to the Disgrace of her good Breeding,* as obstinate as your self, and has been very Insolent to her Mother, and I hear she talks at a rate of her Mother that does not become her; I shall assure her it shall not be born with.

Son. I think *my Mother* us'd her very ill.

Fa. I find you are *too partial* to be Judge of it, *and therefore* ought to let it alone: What has her Mother done to her?

Son. She has taken away all her Books *of Value,* and not only ruffled her with hard Words, but even *struck her* with very little Provocation.

Fa. You have a truer Acount of the Fact, I find, *than of the Provocation*; as to striking her, I regret that she had not done it sooner, and repeated it oftner; her Sauciness to her Mother, and her Contempt of God, *were unsufferable:* It was her good Fortune that I was not there; and as to taking *her Books,* I have had the Mortification to look them all over, and with a great deal of Affliction, *to think* that any Child of mine should spend their time in such foolish, filthy, and abominable Books.

Son. What, do you mean the Plays?

Fa. Yes, I do mean the Plays, Songs, Novels, and such like, which made up her whole Study; *were they fit for a young Maid's Contemplation?*

Son. I must own I think them very fit.

Fa. Then your Sin is *come up* to a Maturity very fit for a publick Reformation, and it is high

high time you were begun with; *wherefore I tell you very plainly*, I shall cause you to pass the same Trial with your *Sister*, and if I find any such like Books in your Custody, *you may be sure* they shall all go the *same Way*.

Son. Then you will put me to the Expence of buying more, for I cannot be without *my Plays*, they are the Study of the most accomplish'd Gentlemen, and no Man of Sence is without them.

Fa. No Man of Vice (you might say) is without them; but I am positive against Plays, *as before*, and I had rather have you not accomplish'd than that the other Inconveniencies of *Plays* should be your Lot; but I can shew you many accomplish'd young Gentlemen who are no ways concern'd with them.

Son. What, who never see a Play!

Fa. No, never.

Son. It is impossible!

Fa. *No, no*, far from impossible.

Son. I can never promise not to go to *the* Play.

Fa. Then you and I shall differ to the greatest Extremity.

Son. *This is intollerable!* I had as lief you would turn me out of your Door; I'll be content to go to the *West Indies*, or be a *Foot Soldier*, or any thing, rather than be made such a Recluse: Why was I not bred up a Papist? Then you might have sent me to a Monastery, and I might have been us'd to a *Cloyster Life*, but to breed me up for a Gentleman, and then confine me as no Gentleman is confin'd; this is exposing me, and making me look a Fool among all Company!

[*He flies out in a Rage.*

Fa.

Fa. I had rather see you a *Foot-Soldier*, or any thing, than listed in the Service of *the Devil*; but here is no need of these desperate Resolutions; here is nothing requir'd of you *but what* becomes a *Gentleman* very well, and as much a Gentleman *as any body:* Can you pretend you cannot serve God, and be *a Gentleman?* That you cannot live a Vertuous Life, and obey the Commands of God, and yet be *a Gentleman?* This is a Reproach upon the very Name of Quality, and such a Slander on *a Gentleman*, as no one will allow: However, this, *in short*, is the Case, *Son*, and if confining you from unlawful Pleasures, and from ruining your own Souls, will make you desperate, and you will be a *Foot-Soldier*, or run away to the *West-Indies*, *you must*, I cannot help it, I suppose you will be weary of it quickly.

Son. I care not what I do, or whither I go.

[*He walks about in a great Passion.*

Fa. Unhappy foolish Youth! Had I extorted Obedience to any unreasonable, unjust Thing; had I put you to any Hardships; had I expos'd you to any Dangers, or depriv'd you of your Lawful Pleasures, *these Things* might ha' been the Effect, and you might have had some Pretence for talking thus *to your Father*; but *all this* for laying before you your unquestionable Duty, for requiring nothing of you but what your *Great Maker* commands, nothing but what is *equal*, *just*, and *good!* This is a deplorable Instance of the woful Depravity of your Judgment, and Corruption of your Nature: *However*, tho' I heartily *pity* and *grieve for* you, yet the thing I desire is so *just*, so *reasonable*, so *necessary*, so much *my Duty* to com-

mand

mand, and *your Interest* to obey, that I cannot, I will not go from it, or abate one Tittle of it, *and therefore* you may consider of it, and *act as you will*, you know my Desire, and fall *back*, fall *edge*, I will have it done; so you may take your Choice for *God* or the *Devil*.

[*Father goes out and leaves him.*

Son. You may be as resolute as you will, you will never bring me to your Beck; What! must I forsake all my Mirth and good Company, and turn Hermit in my young Days! *Not I*, I'll go to the *Gallies* rather, I'll seek my Fortune any where first; not go to the Park! nor see a Play! be as demure as a Quaker! and set up for a Saint! what shall I look * like? * *swears aloud.* I won't be a Mountebank Convert not I, I hate Hypocrisie and Dissimulation, I have too much Honour for it.

Well, I'll go up to my *Sister*, she is an honest resolute *Girl*, if she will but stand to me, *we will take our Fate together.* What can *my Father* do? Sure we are too big for his Correction; we will never be made Fools on at this rate.

The Father had sent for his eldest Daughter, and she had refus'd to come, *as before*, and the Servant brought word she would not come.

[*Father returns.*

Fa. Will not come!

Serv. She said she would not, *indeed*, *first*, but *afterwards* she said she *could not*, Sir.

Fa. Go to her again, *and tell her from me*, if she does not come immediately, I'll come and fetch her.

Ser.

Serv. Sir, she was laid upon the Bed, and said she was indispos'd, and could not come.

Fa. Well, go back then, *and tell her*, her Mother and I will come to her.

Ser. Indeed I told her that I thought you would do so.

Fa. Well, and what said she?

Ser. She said Sir, *she was not fit to speak to you*, I believe she is ill, for she has been crying vehemently.

Fa. I suppose you and she have conferr'd Notes.

Son. I told you Sir, you would have more Opposition to your Design, than from me.

Fa. Perhaps by your Means.

Son. If that could be without my Knowledge, something might be, but I said before I should be tax'd with it, whether guilty or no.

Fa. I'll deal with it, *let it be where it will.*

THE Son as soon as he could get away from his Father, goes up to his Sister's Apartment; it seems the Father, tho' he had resolv'd to talk to his Daughter, had deferr'd it for some time, and did not go up to her Chamber presently.

Being then in some Passion at his Son's behaviour, and withal being preparing for the great Work which he had resolv'd to begin that Evening, he was unwilling to discompose himself, and make himself unfit for what was before him: The rest of the Conduct both of the Son and Daughter, and also the History of the Father's Management at his first beginning his Family Reformation, will all be largely set down in the next Dialogue.

The End of the seventh Dialogue.

The Eighth

DIALOGUE:

BEING between the Eldest Son and Eldest Daughter, her Brother going directly from his Father's discoursing him, as in the last Dialogue, up to his Sister's Chamber, and calling at the Door, begins thus:

Brother. SISTER (where are you) *were you not sent for* by my Father.

Sister. Three times in vain, and ever shall be so; till a more pleasing Message shall invite me.

Bro. But I bear all the weight of those Refusals; my Father says they all lie at my door, and angrily suggests that you are all made Rebels but by me.

Sis. I know no Rebellion in it, *I do not understand* what they would have.

Bro. They would have you come down, and be instructed.

Sis. I sent them word *I was indispos'd*, and they cannot but believe it, when they know how they have us'd me; besides I know their Business, and desire no more of their Instruction, *at least*, of the kind they have already given me a Taste of.

Bro. I have had a long Discourse of it with my Father.

Sis. Well, and what does *the good Reformer* preach? I suppose it is much the same with what I had from my Mother.

Bro. Exactly, (*Kick and Cuff excepted*) and truly, tho' he kept his Hands *off* from me, he has not spar'd abundance of Threatnings, and other positive Testimonies of his Patriarchal Authority.

Sis. Well. but what is the Sum of the Matter? What is the Course we are to take?

Bro. I know not *in the least*, I have heard a great deal of Stuff of reforming the Family, living after a new Fashion, serving God, *and I know not what*; I wonder *who* my Father thinks we have been serving all this while.

Sis. And does he not say we shall not *go out* a Sundays?

Bro. Ay, and a great deal more than that; we must go to no more Plays or Opera's, nor have any of the Plays brought home to read, and a new Family Government is to be erected, I don't know of what kind.

Sis. Well, and when are we to begin? When are we to be clovster'd *for the first time?* Won't he give us a Week to our selves before we begin?

Bro. Not an Hour!

Sis. Nay then, I shall break the first Commandment he gives me; *for* I have made an Appointment, *you know*, to be at the Play to Morrow with my Lady *Lighthead*, and it is impossible to put it off.

Bro. Ay, *and I will go too*, or I shall think it very

very ſtrange, let him ſay what he pleaſes to it.

Sis. I ſuppoſe I ſhall have another *ſlap o'th' Face* for it, but I muſt venture it *once*, for I will not be worſe than my word to *my Lady*.

Bro. What do you talk of venturing it *ONCE*, as if this was the laſt time, and we were never to go to a Play again? *Do you think* I will be abridg'd of ſo dear a Liberty? *No not I*, let my Father depend upon it, tho' I never come into his Doors again, *as he has threatned me*.

Sis. Very well! What did he threaten to turn you out of Doors, *then?*

Bro. No, not directly; *but I told him*, I would be a *Foot Soldier* before I would be confin'd ſo; and *in return* he told me, if I went out in a huff *at this*, I ſhould never come in again, *and a great deal more* ſuch as that.

Sis. Would I were a Man *as you are*, if I was *I'd try him*; what need you care whether you *come in again or no?* you know you have an Eſtate left you by your Uncle, which my Father cannot hinder you of, you can live without him, *I wiſh I could.*

Bro. Ay, *that's true*, but I ſuppoſe we ſhall not come that *length.*

Sis. It may be not *with you*, but I know not how far it may go *with me*, for I hear, *they* are mighty hot and angry with me, *which I care little for*, and am reſolv'd they ſhall not conquer me, *whatever comes of it*; I ſuppoſe they think I cannot tell where to go, or how to live without them.

Bro. They may be miſtaken *perhaps* in that too.

Sis. Nay, tho' they were not miſtaken in it,

I'll go as far as a pair of Shoes will carry me, before Ill be made a *NUN* of: Nay, *I'll go to Service first.*

Bro. You need not go far, you have Friends enough, you will be very well receiv'd at my Aunt ——— 's Houſe, and if they puſh theſe thinks *to Extremities*, I would e'en have you go thither.

Sis. And what will you do? *where will you go?*

Bro. O, I'll do well enough, *I warrant you*, I won't go for a *Foot Soldier*, whatever I ſaid to him; I'll take me a Lodging at *Weſtminſter*, take my Pleaſure, and never trouble my Head with it.

Sis. Agreed then; but ſhan't we go abroad *to Night*? Shall we baulk'd at this rate, and let them think they have Conquer'd us already?

Bro. Why, it's too late now *to go the Park*; my Lady *Lighthead* is gone to be ſure; beſides, we can't have the *Chariot*, and there's no going in *a Hack*. . . .

Sis. I'll tell you what we will do then, *I am for putting the Caſe to a Tryal*, and ſee what my Father will do, when he thinks we have gone in ſpight of him; and yet we will be able to come off of it too at laſt, *if we find him furious.*

Bro. That's well contriv'd, *if it can be done*, but how will you go about it?

Sis. I'll tell you; let *you* and *I* go out thro' the Garden, and take a walk in the Cloſe behind, under the *Lime-Trees*; when my Father calls for me, *my Maid* ſhall ſay *we are gone to the Park*: if he *bears it quietly*, well and good, we will let him remain in the Belief of it, that it may ſerve another time; if he flies out furiouſly,

we

we must *come in again with good Words*, and tell him where we have been, and that we have not been any farther than the Close behind the Garden.

Bro. Admirably well thought of. *let us go immediately*, for my Father and Mother both will be here with you presently, and if you are not gone, it will spoil all the Contrivance.

[*They prepare to go down stairs, and the Young Lady talks thus with her Maid.*

Mistress. Pru.

Maid. Madam.

Mist. Here, take the Key of my Chamber, and stay in it till somebody comes *to look me* from my Mother.

Maid. What Answer shall I give them, *Madam?*

Mist. Tell them my Brother and I *are gone out together*; you may say, You suppose we are gone *to the Park.*

Maid. Shall I say, *Madam*, that you said you were gone to the Park?

Mist. No, no, say you do not know whither we are gone, but that you suppose we are gone thither; *do not we use to go thither, you Fool you?*

Maid. If they should be very inquisitive, they may ask me *what reason I have* to suppose so.

Mist. Is not that a good Reason *for you to think so*, because we used to go thither always on Sunday Night, *without saying* that we told you so?

Maid. Yes Madam, I think it is; for indeed, if you had said nothing to me, I should have thought you had been gone thither, and *ha' told them so* of my own Accord.

Bro This is a clean Thought, *my Dear*, but now we must do it *quickly*, for I find we are to

have a general Conference here *this Evening*, and I suppose we that they call *CHILDREN* too, are to be tutor'd before all the Servants.

Miss. Pru, if you find my *Father* and *Mother* make a great stir for us, slip out *thro' the Garden*, and perhaps you may find somebody at the *Back Gate* to tell you where we are, and then you may come and bring us Intelligence.

[*They go out together a back way thro' the Garden.*

Maid. Yes, *Madam.*

Bro. Come, we are far enough here, * we are quite out of Sight of the House; and *if your Maid comes* we shall see her at the *Garden Gate* well enough.

[* *They are walking under a Row of Trees, just where the Father found his little Child in the first Dialogue.*

Sis. Now I cannot but laugh *to think* what a Fright my Mother will be in, when she misses me.

Bro. As bad as if you were run away with *a Tradesman.*

Sis. She has not been without some Whims of that kind in her Head too, *but she need not*, I am not so fond of a preaching Husband

Bro. I doubt we shall discompose them for their new Devotion which they are setting up to Night.

Sis. Pray *Brother* have you learnt *what they are to do*, they treat me so odly, they will have me comply with *I know not what*; I want to know *what their Design is*, and what they pretend we are *to do*, or *to be*, it is all a heap of Nonsence to me.

Bro. O, they talk of a great Family-Reformation, and we must submit to *such* Rules, and

such

such Orders as they shall *please* to give us; and, *as I told you*, we Two were to be call'd down all together, to be talk'd to among the rest of the Children.

Sis. What, are we to turn Babies again, *and say our Catechise?*

Bro. I don't know, but my Father, *as I hear*, intends to make a long Discourse of his new Schemes for the Management of his Family, to give them all new Rules, and tell them what shall be the standing Orders of his House for the future.

Sis. We ha' Preaching enough at Church I *think*, can't he let us alone at Home.

Bro. I can't tell what to say to it, *but he will do it*, and e'en let him go on in his own Way, let him make a School of his Family; turn *Pædagogue* himself, and make all his People School-boys; let him but *let me alone*, I care not what he does.

Sis. Why that's what *I said before*; the Servants are here *to Day*, and gone *to Morrow*; if he can't get a parcel of Fools *this time*, he may *another*, and in time, perhaps, he may get a whole House full of good *pious* Creatures, that will say *as he says*, and do just as *he bids them*; there's my Brother *Will*, and pious *Betty*, they are grown mighty good Things already, and for the little Children, they may make them do what they please, but as *we are grown up* to be past it, they may e'en use the Rod and the Frown where it is fit to be used, and *let us answer for our selves*: I think they cannot in reason deny us this.

Bro. Besides, had they done this *gradually*, and begun it *sooner*, we might by degrees have been

brought to ha' *liked it*, or at least to have *born with it*; but to be driven headlong into a thing, and forc'd *at once* to a whole Change upon every part of our Lives; this is the foolishest thing: *What shall we look like* in the World!

Sis. What indeed! I am in a fine Case already, *I can say nothing* to my Lady *Lighthead*, but make a Lie, and send her word I was not well.

Bro. Yes, you may say you are *but a Child*, and your Mother box'd your Ears for being a naughty Girl, and would not let you go Abroad.

Sis. Yes, and you may say to my Ld - - - -: when he asks you why you disappointed him, that *you are but under Government*, and your Father would not let you stir out of Doors.

Bro. To be sure I shall affront all the Persons of Quality of my acquaintance, and shall look always like *a School boy*; when I am in Company they will ask me *how I 'scap'd out*; if I have given my Governour *the Slip*; and if I have *play'd Truant*: When I am for breaking off at Night, and not willing to stay, they'll *mock me*, and tell me I must go home to *Family-Duty*, and go say *my Prayers* like a good Boy!

Sis. Yes, and that if you stay any longer *you shall be whipt*, or lock'd out of Doors when you come home.

Bro. In short, I had as good be out of the World; *I am sure* I shall be fit for no Company in the World.

Sis. I wonder my Father *should not consider* these things, he is no ignorant Man, he knows well enough what belongs to being *genteel*, and has kept as good Company himself as any body.

Bro.

Bro. Why, *that is true too*; but he is so bewitch'd with this *new Whimsie* of having neglected the Education of his Children, and the Government of *his Family*, that he is coming to Confession *even to us*; he talks of asking God forgiveness for it, and I know not what, *a deal of such Stuff*; I am perswaded he will bring his whole Family into Confusion.

Sis. I can't tell what to make of it all, *it is the oddest thing* that I ever saw in my Life.

Bro. However, since he will do so, *and we cannot help it*, I think it may be our best way *to let him alone*, let him *go on*, only let him leave us out, we are past Tutelage, *out of our Minority*, and I think they may let us alone, that's all I am for asking of him.

Sis. I wish they would but hear Reason; *if they would let us alone*, we would let their Reformation go on as it will.

Bro. But I see it will not be done; *my Father* is so over submissive in his Confessions, and so warm in his Proceedings, that I doubt he will also be obstinate, *for nothing is more so* than these Enthusiastick Fits of Repentance.

Sis. What a Tale is this! *HE* repents, and *WE* must perform the *Pennance*; *for my part*, *Brother*, I cannot entertain any settled Thoughts of the ridiculous Change of Life my Mother talk'd of, there's not the least Consistency in it; *she says*, she has sinned in neglecting to instruct us, *and therefore* we must all be cloyster'd up upon the Notion of Reformation; if she has sinned, she must repent of it, I think, what is that to us? *we did not make her do it*; what can we

we do in it? we are brought up now, she cannot Educate us over again.

Bro. Yes, she says we should have been taught *so* and *so* a long time ago, *and since it was not done then*; it must be done now.

Sis. What will she teach us?

Bro. Nay do not ask me; *I suppose* she told you herself what she would teach you.

Sis. No, she did not, *perhaps she intended it*, but she flew out in a Rage, and her Passion would not give her leave to say it out.

Bro. She says, she intended to have discours'd at large with you *quietly* and *calmly*, but you provok'd her, and would not give her time, *for you began.*

Sis. Indeed *I was vex'd* that we might not go out *as we used to do*, and I think it was reason; *but that was over*, and I was only humming to my self the Tune of the last Opera, and she flung to me, and struck me because it was Sabbath day *forsooth*; for my part *I know no harm in it, not I*, I did not sing the Song out, *as I told you*, I only hummi'd softly, it might be a *Psalm Tune* for ought she knew.

Bro. Well, but come *Sister*, what shall we do next?

Sis. We must take our Measures according as the Conduct of my Father and Mother shall direct.

Bro. Yonder's *Pru*, I warrant she brings some News, *she stays* at the Garden Gate.

Mist. Well, what is the matter, *Pru?*

[*Mistress goes towards her.*

Maid. Matter Madam! I beseech you come in! I fear my Master will go distracted, and you'll all be ruin'd.

Mist.

Miſt. Prethee don't tell me of that; *let him be mad if he pleaſes*: Did they ask for us? *Tell me the Particulars*

Maid. Ask for you, *Madam!* Yes, you may be ſure of it.

Miſt. Well, how? Tell us all, *Pru.*

Maid. Why, *Madam*, about half an Hour after you were gone, your Mother ſent Mrs *Betty*, your Siſter, up to your Chamber *for you*; ſhe ask'd for me, and I ſaid, *as you bid me*, you were gone out; ſhe ask'd me whither? I told her, *I did not know*: Why, *ſaid ſhe*, ſhe is not gone to the Park, *is ſhe!* I told her, yes *Madam*, I believe ſhe is, for I heard her ſpeak of it.

Miſt. Well, that was right; what ſaid *Betty?*

Maid. Poor young Lady! ſhe fell out in the greateſt Paſſion imaginable, *weeping* and *crying out* for her dear Siſter, *meaning you*, and that you were *loſt* and *undone* both Soul and Body.

Miſt. Poor Child! What followed that Scene?

Maid. She went down Stairs to your Mother, and the *Old Lady* came up immediately, and ſoon after her came your Father, all into your Chamber.

Miſt. Very well, it works as I would have it now: *What ſaid they to you*, Pru?

Maid. Firſt they examin'd me *where you was*; then, *when you went out*, and *whether you were alone*, or *your Brother with you*; I told them, I believ'd you were gone together, but I was not ſure, nor you did not tell me whither you went.

Miſt. Well, that was right again, *Pru*, what ſaid they then?

Maid. Your Father made few Words, *but it might eaſily be obſerv'd* they were both very angry;

angry; *your Mother* said you would repent it, and *I perceived, Madam*, tho' your Mother said most, yet your Father seem'd most provok'd; *he said* he would not discompose himself then about it, for he had other Work before him, but he would take a Course to prevent his being Insulted at this rate, *and so* went down.

Mist. And is that all, *Pru?*

Maid. No, no, Madam, that is not all, *I assure you.*

Mist. Well, go on then.

Maid. Why *Madam*, my Master call'd all the Family together, and----

Mist. What! and made a long Preach to you all, *did he?*

Maid. Dear Madam, do not mock at your Father; I *am sure* there was not a Child, nor a Servant in the House *but wept*, and I am perswaded had you been there, you could not have refrain'd.

Mist. What, are you grown godly too, *Pru!*

Bro. Nay Sister, come, don't let us jeer them to the Servants *neither.*

Mist. Well but *Pru*, come tell us the whole Matter.

Maid. I cannot repeat Particulars, *Madam*; but when your Father had call'd us all in, *the Minister*, for my Master had sent for him on purpose, *made a Discourse* for about half an Hour about Family-worship, and took his Text in *Jerem.* 10. 25. *Pour out thy Fury upon the Heathen that know thee not, and upon the Families that call not on thy Name.*

Mist. Why then you have had a Sermon, *Pru!* What has my Father set up a Meeting House?

Maid. Good Madam, do not let me tell you any

any more; *it grieves mes me for you*, to hear you make a Jest at good things, and at your *own Father* too.

Mist. Go on *Mrs. Pert*, you was not sent to *Preach too*, was you?

Maid. I wish you had heard *what I have heard*, if you had had a Heart of Flint, it would have melted you; but my telling you, will do no good *I fear*, I wish you would excuse me, *Madam*, and if you love your own Welfare, *I beseech you come in*, there is *ONE STEP* left you to save all still, *and but one*, if you miss it, *I am sure you are undone.*

Mist. Prethee *Pru*, first tell us the History, and give your Advice when you are ask'd for it.

Maid. I will Madam, *if you will have Patience with me*: The Minister, I told you, made a Discourse about Family-worship, and directed himself *chiefly to us Servants*; he told us, that our Master and Mistress being sensible that they had too long neglected the Instruction of their Children and Servants, and omitted the Worship of God, and setting up good Orders in the Family, *were resolv'd* to alter the same, and he desired the Servants to consider the Reasonableness of it, and how much it would be our Advantage, and that we would all yield a chearful Obedience to such Orders as should now be set up in the Family, and to behave our selves soberly and modestly in the House, avoiding loose profane Talk, and wicked Words, Oaths, Drunkenness, *and the like*; and if we were all willing and desirous to be thus reformed, he desired we would signifie our Willingness *by standing up.*

Mist.

Mist. And did you stand up, *Pru?*

Maid. Yes, *Madam*, do you think I would not? And every Servant in the House stood up too, but *Thomas* the Coachman went farther than any of us.

Mist. What did he do?

Maid. He stood up, and making a Bow *to the Minister*, he said he agreed to it *with all his Heart*, and he thank'd God that he had heard such a Proposal in the House, and a great deal more that I can't remember.

Bro. He is a hypocritical Rascal, I owe him a Caneing for all this.

Mist. Let us hear it all Brother; *Well*, and what then, *Pru?*

Maid. Why, *Madam*, after the Minister had done, my Master *directing his Speech to the Minister*, said, he thought it his Duty to acknowledge *with Shame*, that he had, in a great measure, been the Ruin of his Family; that he had totally neglected either the Worship of God in his House, or the teaching and instructing his Children; what he meant *by what followed*, I cannot tell, but he held your little Brother *Tommy* in his Hand, and lifting up the Child, and *kissing it*, he said these Words: *This little Creature has been the blessed Messenger from God to alarm me, and convince me of the great Breach of my paternal Duty, and has innocently reproach'd me with not praying to God for it, or with it, and with not instructing or teaching it to pray for its self:* Then turning to us all, and, *said he*, ye have all Cause to reproach me with it *as well as this Child*, and more too, for he is not too old to receive Impressions

preſſions yet, *as I doubt ſome of you are*, and *as appears by their Abſence* my eldeſt Children ſeem to be, whoſe Ruin both Soul and Body lies at my Door.

Miſt. Did my Father ſay all this?

Maid. Yes, Madam, and a great deal more that I cannot repeat.

Miſt. It was very moving *I confeſs.*

Maid. It was ſo, and that made me ſay, *Madam*, I wiſh you had heard it, as I did.

Miſt. It is as well from thy Mouth, *Pry*, for I ſee thou art affected with it, and ſo am I a little too, I think, in ſpight of my Reſolutions to the contrary.

Maid. How would you then, *Madam*, to have ſeen your Father *when he ſpoke of you two that were abſent?* How the Tears run down his Face, and he was fain to ſtop ſpeaking a good while; do you think you could ha' contain'd? I aſſure you *Madam*, there was not a Servant in the Houſe could refrain weeping.

Miſt. You almoſt perſwade me to cry, *Prue*; but go on.

Maid. When he had ſaid this, *Madam*, he told us how he was reſolv'd to live, and that ſince *we had all* expreſs'd our readineſs to comply with it, he was very thankful that he ſhould have ſo little Trouble: *He told us*, that all he expected was eaſie and reaſonable, and nothing but what every one would acknowledge was moſt ſuitable to the Happineſs of us all, as Men and Women, as well as Chriſtians; that he requir'd *nothing* uneaſie, *nothing* but that all manner of Vice might be refrain'd, and a ſober and well-

order'd

order'd Life might be our Rule; *that* the Sabbath-day might be ſtrictly obſerv'd, and *that* all his Servants ſhould attend Family Prayer, which he reſolv'd to have kept up every Night and Morning.

After this the Miniſter went to Prayers, and after the Miniſter, *my Maſter*, Madam; *but had you heard him!*

Miſt. What then, *Pru?*

Maid. I would have gone a Mile on my bare Knees that you had heard him.

Miſt. Heard what, *Pru?* What ſhould I have heard?

Maid. You would have heard what you never heard in your Life.

Miſt. That's true, *Pru*, for I never heard him Pray in my Life, nor no body elſe, I believe.

Maid. Well, *Madam*, I wiſh you had heard it now.

Miſt. What was it? what would have mov'd me ſo, *Pru?*

Maid. Would it not have moved you, *Madam*, to hear your *dear Father* pray for you at the ſame time that you are grieving him as you do, and beg of God to forgive you, and reclaim you, and to reſtore you to him, that you might ſtill be a Child to him, and he may have an Opportunity to make up to you what Injury he had done you by his Neglect in your Education, and that your Ruin may not be the Effect of his Omiſſion? Would not this have mov'd you, *Madam!*

Miſt. Truly *Pru*, I cannot tell but it might.

Maid. If the Words had not mov'd you, it would have made ſome Impreſſion on you to have ſeen the reſt of the Family.

Miſt.

Mist. What are they concern'd in it?

Maid. Why, they are all concern'd for you two?

Mist. For what, *Pru*?

Maid. If you will not be displeas'd, *Madam.*

Mist. No, *Prue*, speak freely.

Maid. Why really, Madam, they are concern'd on several Accounts, to see such a Breach in the Family; to see my Master so griev'd at it, and yet to see him so resolute against you, that they see plainly it will be both your Ruin, and then to think upon how unjustifiable a Ground you act; pray pardon me, Madam, it is not fit I should talk thus.

Mist. Go on, *Pru.*

Maid. Why, Madam, was it ever known that a young Gentleman, and a young Lady, the eldest Branches of the Family, should break all to pieces with their Father, *and such a Father too*, and on no Quarrel, but that he would have them reform, and serve God! What will the World say? I beseech you Madam consider of it, all the House condemn you now, and all the World will condemn you as soon as you are gone.

Mist. Well *Pru*, but we are not gone yet.

Maid. I am afraid of it.

Mist. Why so, *Pru?* I suppose that belongs to the latter part of my Father's Discourse.

Maid. Yes, *Madam.*

Mist. Tell us that too, *Pru.*

Maid. Why, that is it which gives me the greatest Concern for you, *Madam*, that when my Master had prayed so earnestly and so affectionately for your reclaiming and returning to your Duty, *he went on to pray for himself*, that he might

not be suffered to yield to your Obstinacy; that his Affection might not prevail over his Duty, and if God had resolv'd totally to cast you off, he might be able to do so too, and that in the mean time he might be supported in maintaining his Resolution of not receiving you again but as Penitents, and on good Assurance of your Reformation as well as Repentance; and this, Madam, made me so earnest with you; I think I shall break my Heart for you. [*The Maid weeps.*

Mist. Prethee don't grieve, *Pru*, but tell me what is to be done then: What did you mean by talking of our coming in? I don't see what we have done, that we must repent so much.

Maid. Why no, Madam, I hope not, if you will but be prevail'd on now, and that made me say there was one *STEP* left to save you still.

Mist. I observ'd you said so, *Pru*; prethee good *Pru*, what *Step* is that? I did not think Things were come to such an Extremity with my Father. [*She seems to be concern'd, and lets fall some Tears.*

Maid. Why, *Madam*, all this, and more that I have not told you, is upon a firm belief which both your Father and Mother have that you are *both* gone to the Park, as you know you bade me say.

Mist. That's true.

Maid. Now Madam, if you will give me leave to go in and say you are both of you here, and have been no farther, perhaps this will alter the Case.

Mist. You do not know my Father, *Pru*, he is not so soon alter'd.

Maid.

Maid. Perhaps, Madam, you may not know him neither *in this case*: Do you think if he reckons your Disobedience or Fault so much his Affliction, he will not be glad to hear that you have not been guilty?

Mist. Guilty of what, *Pru?* What is the Fault?

Maid. Why, Madam, my Master believes, that in Defiance of his Command, and God's Command, and on purpose to let him see you resolve not to regard what he has said to you, *you are both gone to the Park* to take your Pleasure now on the Sabbath-Day, and on this Supposition he has commanded, when you come back, *none of the Servants* shall dare let you in till they call him, and that though he be gone to Bed, he will be call'd up.

Mist. Nay, I knew if he was angry *he would be very warm.*

Maid. Now, Madam, here is a few Minutes left, my Master may be convinc'd you have not been any farther than this Place, and you may come in the same Way you went out, and I dare say my Master will be glad of so just an Occasion not to be severe with you; try him, *Madam, dear Madam,* for your own sake do, *you are quite undone* I am sure, if you do not.

Mist. He won't believe us now, *Pru.*

Maid. I shall be a Witness for you, Madam; besides *your Brother there* is in his Gown and Slippers, and that will prove he cannot have been at the Park.

Bro. Ay, ay, he cannot but be satisfied, *go Pru, let it be so,* we will follow you; I would not push things too fast neither, *Sister.*

Sis. Indeed we have tried him far enough *for the first time*, we'll go in after her then.

Maid. If you please to be walking a little while, I'll make you a Signal when to come nearer.

Sis. Do so *Pru*, we will come forward till we are in sight; if my Father continues very angry, do you open my Chamber-window, and then we will come into the Garden.

Bro. Come let us go directly in after her.

Sis. No, no, let us wait a little, that will look as if she had fetch'd us.

Bro. I can't think of provoking my Father too much neither.

Sis. But let us get off *of this then* as well as we can. [*They continue walking.*

[Pru *makes as if she came down Stairs from her Mistress's Chamber*, and meeting the Mother, *she begins, weeping.*

Pru. Oh Madam! I am undone! 'Tis I have made all this Mischief!

Moth. Why, what's the matter, *Pru?*

Pru. Why, Madam, I told you I thought my Young Master, and my Mistress were gone to the Park, and that made my Master so angry with them both, and 'tis nothing like it; 'tis all my Fault!

Mo. How do you know that, *Pru?* I should be glad for their own Sakes it was as you say, and *so would their Father too*; for though he is resolv'd to resent it, as he ought to do, being Master of his Family, yet, *as a tender Father*, I am sure he would rejoice if it were not so.

Pru.

Pru. So, Madam! Do but go up Stairs to our Window, you may see them walking together in the back Close, under the *Lime-Trees.*

Mo. That may be, *Pru*, then they are come back.

Pru. Nay, Madam, that is impossible too; for my Young Master is in his Gown and Slippers, and I dare say, if you send up into his Chamber, you will find his Cloaths there.

Fa. What is that *Pru* says? *The Father comes.*
Are they come back? has any of my Servants let them in?
I assure them I'll be as good as my Word if they have, no such Servant shall stay another Day in my House.

Mo. My *Dear*, be not too rash, we are all mistaken, come along with me; look yonder they are, and *Pru* says they have been there all this while. [*They go up Stairs, and look out of the Window.*

Fa. I am not to be cheated; this is a Feint, they have their Intelligence within Doors, and are come back, and walk there to blind us, but it will not do, I will not be impos'd upon, and I hope you will not neither, *my Dear.*

Mo. No, *my Dear*, I will not be impos'd upon neither; but if it be really so, I believe you would be glad to be satisfied, and would be agreeably disappointed, *as well as I*, for I know your Resentment is the Effect of your Duty, and not the defect of your Love to them.

Fa. Indeed I would be so glad to know that they were not guilty, I could let out some of my Blood to have it so; but I can receive no Satisfaction in

being impos'd upon, for I never believe a thing *meerly* becauſe I would have it ſo.

Mo. Nor I neither; but *Pru ſays*, they cannot have been farther, for they are undreſt, and I am going to my Son's Chamber, *to ſee* if it be ſo.

Fa. Do ſo, that may be ſome Satisfaction.

[Pru *runs up, and throws open her Miſtreſs's Chamber-Window, and they ſee the Signal, and come on to the Garden.*

Mo. The thing is plain, I hope, for here is his Hat, and Sword, and Coat. [*The Mother returns.*

Fa. He may have come in, and undreſs'd him.

Mo. Somebody muſt ha' let him in then, and you know we have had all the Servants in our View; beſides, they would not have been ſo weak, when they had gotten in, to have gone out again, after hearing what Orders we had given; and that Servant who had been ſo kind to have let them in, would not fail to ha' told them of it.

Fa. That is true; I begin to hope they have not been ſo wicked as I fear'd, I'm ſure I ſhall be very glad of it if it prove ſo.

Mo. Look, they are coming into the Garden, it does not look as if they were guilty, I confeſs.

Fa. I'll go and *try them* before they ſhall come within my Doors; *for* not to keep Laws, is all one as not to make them.

[*They ſit down together in the Garden, the Father goes out to them.*

Fa. I deſire a poſitive Anſwer from you both; where have you been ſince you went out.

[*They ſtand up, perceiving their Father very angry.*

Son.

Son. We have been walking under the Lime-Trees, Sir.

Fa. That I know; my Question implies *where else.*

Son. My Answer was so simple and plain, I did not think it could have been suspected, Sir, and therefore I did not add, tho' it is most true *we have been no where else.*

Fa. Your Conduct justifies the Suspicion; why was no Servant acquainted with it, that when you were call'd for, might have answered for you?

Son. That might be an Omission, but could not be a Design.

Fa. Why not a Design?

Son. Because it seems to answer no End, or at least, that I know of.

Fa. Perhaps you was willing to try me with a Belief of your being gone to the Park, contrary to my express Command; I am not fond of being play'd with in such things as these.

Son. It is a sign to me, *Sir*, that you are very angry *at something*, that you can suppose such a thing of me; unless there were some great Satisfaction in your Displeasure, it can be none to try whether you can be angry or no.

Fa. I see no other End in your walking here so long.

Son. You having expressly forbidden our going to the Park, I could not but think our walking here ought to be taken for a Compliance with your Order.

Fa. While you disputed the Reasonableness and Justice of my Order, I had the more reason to suspect your Compliance.

Son. But if I complied when I disputed the Justice of the Command, it would more unanswerably argue an entire Obedience to it *as your Command only.*

Fa. I had rather you had obey'd it *as God's Command*, than as mine, and then you would no more have spent your time *here*, than at the Park.

Son. But if it be the first *Sir*, your present Displeasure will remove, if it was raised upon a Supposition of our having been at the Park.

Fa Your Absence on another Account has been offensive.

Son. But cannot be justly charg'd as a Fault, *Sir*, for I had no Command, except negative, not to go to the Park, which you will easily see is obey'd.

Fa. I must suppose it.

Son. Our Dress will be Evidence for us, if your Suspicions are not to be satisfied by the Assurances *of one* who never prevaricated with you; perhaps if I could have dissembled *more*, as others have, I might have been *less* suspected.

Fa. You have much Advantage, you think, in not being guilty this time, I should have been more glad to have seen your Inclination reform'd too.

Son. I do not see my Inclination is Vicious, and am not a little surprized at the Construction that is put upon my most innocent Actions.

Fa. And I do not see that what I expect is unreasonable, and am as much concern'd to see my self contradicted by my eldest Son and Daughter, in a Proposal to their good, Soul and Body.

Dau.

Dau. I oppose nothing as I know of.

Fa. And comply with nothing.

Son. We had no command from you to stay within.

Fa. I demand of you both, whether you have been in no Company, or any where else than *as you say*, walking under the Lime-Trees, and I expect to be answer'd without the least Prevarication.

Son. You may be assur'd, Sir, we have been no where else.

Fa. I am glad for your own Sakes; for the Measures I had resolved to take, would have been very irksome to me, tho' absolutely necessary: *I shall say no more now*, it is on the Condition only that your Answer is literally true, that I can admit you to come into my Doors: I shall state your Duty more exactly to you in the Morning, and perhaps too exactly expect your Compliance.

[*The Father goes away.*

Sis. I never saw my Father look so in my Life, *I am frighted.*

Bro. He convinces me he is in Earnest, after a manner I never expected: It falls out very well that we contriv'd this Shift, we should have made such a Breach as would never have been reconcil'd; *I'll carry the Jest no farther.*

Sis. What must we do then? I cannot think of being a Nun, and being abridg'd of those Liberties and Pleasures I always enjoy'd: Why did they not bring us up to it from Children, then it had been Natural to us, and we had known no better.

Bro. I'll tell you *Sister*, what I'll do; my Father promis'd me I should Travel, I'll see if I can get leave to go Abroad, then I shall be a little out of Company, and shall not look so like a Fool under Government, *as I must do now.*

Sis. And what must I do?

Bro. Ask their Consent to go and live at your Aunt's, as we said before.

Sis. So I will then. [*They go in, and go up stairs, and in the Chamber they meet the Maid.*

Bro. Well, *Pru*, how stands Matters?

Maid. I'm glad you're come in, *Sir*, I trembled for fear you should quarrel, when I saw my Master go to you, for he was in a great Passion, and declar'd when he went out to you, that if he was not very well satisfied that you had been no farther than the *Lime-Trees*, you should not come within the Doors.

End of the Eighth Dialogue.

A short Discourse between the Husband and Wife, which finishes the History of the Conduct of their Children.

Husband. MY *Dear*, we have had a hard Day's Work, but I hope it will issue well.

Wife. Alas! how easily had all this been prevented, if we had begun well, and how great Advantage have they who begin their Family-Work when they begin to have Families.

Hus. I have eased my Heart in the publick Acknowledgment I have made of that Omission, and I hope we shall testifie our sincere Repentance for that Sin, by our exact observing our Duty in time to come.

Wife. But the Difficulty of our two eldest Children, I doubt, will every Day renew our Affliction.

Hus. I must take it for *a just Punishment* upon my past Neglect, but I will not *for that* cease to go through with my Work; *I will not cease* to pray for their reducing, *NOR* to use my Endeavour, as well by Perswasion, as by Severity, to oblige them to a reformed Life; and I have a full Dependence upon God's Goodness, that he will restore them *both* to me *yet*, tho' they may stand out a great while; and *this*, *I hope*, preserves my Resolution to omit nothing that may reclaim them.

Wife.

Wife. I see them both so wedded to their Plesures, that they think it a most intolerable burde to be abridg'd of them, and I find my Daughte sullen and Melancholly upon it; she tells m she cannot appear among Company, and she asham'd to be seen, and desires me to let her g to her Aunt's, and live with her a while.

Hus. By all means *let her go*, I think it a Ste of that Providence to reclaim her, that I wi telling you *I hope in*, for my Sister will allo her or encourage her in none of her Levity, *am sure of that*, and my Brother keeps just suc an Orderly House as I ought to have kept, an hope to keep for the future.

Wife. Indeed I am very willing to it, for he Sister owns to me, she receiv'd the first Impre sions of Religion and serious Thoughtfullness *her Aunt's*; *I'll e'en send her away.*

Hus. But what shall we do with *your Son* for I have a secret hint given me to Day, tha he designs to ask me leave to Travel, and pre tends that I promised him.

Wife. Yes, and I have been told, that if yo refuse him, he will go without your Consent, de pending upon his own Estate.

Hus. I shall be more willing to let him g now *than ever*, because as I would would hav no Obstruction to the Resolution I have take to reform my Family, so I would be very sorry to see him expose his Reputation so much as to contradict me in it, *and appear in doing so*, which must embroil me with him, *for* I shall not yield to my Son, especially where I am sure he is in the wrong; and indeed, his Carriage hitherto has

been

en a very great Affliction to me; if he proves pertinent, I shall be oblig'd to resent it: Therefore I shall only put in one Condition, if he asks e, (*viz.*) That he take Mr. *B*---- for his Tuor to Travel with him, and he shall go when will.

Wife. That I dare say he will not do.

Hus. Then he goes without my Blessing or Consent.

The Daughter is sent to her Aunt's, where having a sober, religious Family to converse with, he begins to be less fond of her old Humours, nd a Foundation is laid there in her, by the Instruction and Example of her Aunt and her Children, which ends at last in her compleat Reformation, by marrying one of her Cousins, a soer, religious Gentleman.

The Son Travels without his Father's Consent, spends his Estate, gets a Commission in the Army, s disbanded, comes Home a Cripple and a Begger; and tho always very penitent for rejecting his Father's Government and Instruction, yet never submits himself to his Father, so as to be receiv'd again, and dies miserable, as will be seen n the last Part of this Work.

The End of the First Part.

PART II.

The INTRODUCTION.

THE first Part having historically treated of a Father's Conduct with his Houſhold, the Foundation of his Reſolution to reform his Family, inſtruct his Children, *&c.* I hope it may afford ſuitable Leſſons to Fathers, Mothers, Maſters of Families, *&c.* in their Duty of Family-Inſtruction; as alſo Examples, and ſuitable Hints to Children, to warn them againſt deſpiſing and contemning the Inſtruction of their Parents, from the Conſequences on either Side, which appear in the foregoing Hiſtory of this unhappy, yet happy Family.

The enſuing Part will go the ſame Length in the following Caſes, *viz.* (1.) Maſters to Servants. (2.) Servants to Maſters, and to Fellow-Servants. (3) Companions and Sociates one to another; from all which may be learnt ſome Leſſons to inſtruct us how to fill up every Relation, every Occaſion, every Circumſtance of Life, and every Converſation, with ſomething uſeful and inſtructing to one another.

The

The Scene lies now among the meaner Sort of eople, where the Value of a Religious Family, he Extent of its Influence, and the Advantage f good *Family-Government*, as well to those who re out, as to those who are in the Family, may e particularly observ'd from the remarkable Conuct of some Persons belonging to three or four amilies in a certain known Country-Corporation t some Distance from *London*.

THERE liv'd in a Country Town, an industrious Trading Man, in middling Circumstances, whose Employment being a Clothier, caus'd him to take several Apprentices, and several Journey-men; and who had also several Children of his own; He was a Man of an exact upright Conversation, of a most devout and religious Behaviour, but more especially in his Family; one that constantly maintain'd the Exercise of Religious Worship in his House, instructing and educating his Children and Servants in the Fear and Knowledge of God, with great Care and Regard, *as well* to their Good, *as* to his own Duty, and this with all possible Modesty and Caution, avoiding all hypocritical Shews and Appearances of Ostentation, being a serious useful Christian in every Respect, and his Wife was in her Place every way like him.

There was in the same Town a wealthy Shopkeeper, a Man in great Business, a Magistrate or Alderman of the Corporation, who had likewise a large Family of Children and Servants: The Man was bred to business, drove a great Trade, and grew Rich apace; he was a morally honest sober

sober Man, had the Reputation of a very fair Dealer, the Credit of what we call a good Man, that would do no body any Wrong; but as to Religion, he made no great Stir about that, he served God *a Sundays* as other People did, and troubled his Head very little with any thing else that was Religious all the Week after; indeed, he liv'd in a constant hurry of Business, so that he had really no time to think of, or to spare about Religious Affairs.

His Children, as they grew up, he put honestly to School, enquir'd sometimes superficially if they were good Boys, and learn'd their Books, and the Master, as superficially giving an Answer that they did pretty well, he was mighty easie as to their doing well in the World.

As to his Servants, it was none of his Care if the least what they did, so they minded his Business; as to Idleness, he took pretty good Care to prevent that, by finding them constant Employment in his Warehouses, and about his Business; and as to either their Morals or Religion, he counted it none of his Business, except at any time some gross Indecency came in his Way, which oblig'd him to find Fault, and then his Displeasure respected the Neglect or Obstruction of his Business, or the Complaints or Uneasiness in the Neighbourhood, rather than any thing of Religion.

It appears by the Story in hand, that two young Lads, much about the same Age, and pretty near the same time, came Apprentices to these two Men, the Youths were very different in their Behaviour, tho' otherwise agreeable to one another;

ther, their Conduct was, *as in such Cases it will be*, suitable to the Families of their Parents, with whom they had been Educated; *the one* a sober, well inclin'd, serious Lad, that had been brought up by religious Parents, well instructed, and formed early to desire the best things; *the other* a loose, proflagate, prophane Boy, perfectly wild, that had been taught nothing, and desir'd to learn nothing *but his Trade*, given to swearing, lying, and ill Words, but of a good Capacity enough to learn, if he had been taught in time, so that he was meerly lost for want of early Instruction.

The sober religious Lad was unhappily put Apprentice to the rich Shopkeeper, who regarded no Religion but his Trade; and the wild prophane Boy was put Apprentice to the religious Tradesman the Clothier, and being Neighbours, the Boys became acquainted it seems; altho' there was very little suitableness between the manner of the young Men's Education, yet their Age, Neighbourhood, and opportunity of Conversation concurring, and other Circumstances perhaps in their Temper, or in the time of their coming to their Masters, making them more agreeable to one another than ordinary, they became Companions, and contracted an intimate Friendship, the Consequence of which will appear in the following Dialogues.

The First

DIALOGUE.

AFTER, as is noted, the two Youths had contracted an Intimacy, so that it was grown up to a kind of Affection between them, they agreed in the first Place to call Brothers, *and then*, that every Evening when their Shops were shut up, and their Business over, they would spend any Time they had to spare, always together, either at their Masters Doors, or walking, or as their Liberty would permit; and, *as may be supposed to be pretty usual in such Cases*, it was not the last of the Questions they asked one another at these Meetings, how they lik'd their Masters, their Employments, their Usage, *and the like*, in these Discourses it fell out they wanted no Grievances to complain of on both Sides; for that neither of them, tho they had both gone so far as to be Bound, lik'd their Circumstances; but it seem'd, that the greatest of their Dislike was at their Masters, and the respective Management of their Families, rather than at any thing in the Trades they carried on, which they otherwise lik'd well enough.

Says

Says *Will*, who liv'd with the good Clothier; I'll tell you plainly, Brother *Tom*, I am quite tir'd out with my Master, I can't imagine what my Father meant when he pick'd out such a Man for me; I'm sure my Father is none of those kind of People himself. Why, our House is a Monastery instead of a Shop, or a Workhouse

A Monastery, *Will!* says the other, what *do you mean by that?* Don't we hear your People and your Servants about their Business every Day; they don't dress Cloth, and comb Wool in the Monasteries.

Why no, Brother, says *Will*, it is not a Monastery so, I don't mean *that*; but we have such a World of Ceremonies, and religious Doings among us, 'tis enough to weary a body off their Legs; I'm sure I shall never endure it long.

Tho. Perhaps you are sooner tired with these Religious Doings, Brother, that you speak of, than you would be with other things: Is not that it, Brother *Will?* speak honestly.

Will. Nay, I do not know much about it, I confess; it don't signifie much, I suppose, but to torment us.

Tho. Nor do you mind it much, I suppose, when you are at it, *Brother*, do ye?

Will. No indeed, not I; I take care to get a good Sleep all the while, if I can.

Tho. Fie upon you, *Will.*

Will. Why, what does it signifie to me?

Tho. What their Prayers, *Brother?*

Will. Ay, their Prayers; why they pray for themselves, not for me, do they?

Tho. No doubt they pray for you too.

Will. I don't care whether they do or no.

Tho. Nay there I think you are wrong, *Brother Will*; should we not be glad to have any body pray for us? I remember, at Church there are Bills sent in, for the Minister to pray for Folks; they would not put up Bills to be pray'd for, if it was of no Signification.

Will. Ay, that's when they are Sick, *Brother*, but what's that to me, I am well enough, and it is but when they desire it, now I never desir'd them to pray for me; what need they trouble their Heads about me in their Prayers?

Tho. Well, but *Brother*, you say they pray for themselves, why should you be against that?

Will. Not I; but then they may do it by themselves, *can't they?* What need they keep us up at Night, and raise us up in the Morning? can't they let us alone, we work hard enough all day, they ought to let us sleep at Night, sure.

Tho. Why, do they take up so long Time at it?

Will. Ay, I think it is long *for us that work hard at our Business all Day*, here we are hawl'd out of our Beds every Morning by Six a Clock to come to Prayers, before we open the Shop, or go into the Workhouse, *and at Night* we are kept up, I know not how long, to read, and go to Prayers, when we might be all a-bed and asleep; I tell you 'tis a meer Monastery, I cannot endure it.

Tho. Well, but *Brother*, I remember one thing by the By, it seems this can't be much Trouble to you, for you acknowledge you sleep all the while if you can, so that you do not lose much of your Rest.

Will.

Will. Ay, that's true, but that can't be always; besides every now and then they catch me at it, and then there is such a Noise with them--- Then there's our Master's Son, he is such a religious Monkey, he is always a jogging a body, that I can't get a good sleep for him; but this is not all, *Brother*, we have abundance of strange Doings of this kind, besides going to Prayers.

Tho. But hark you, *Brother Will*, about calling you up in a Morning, let me hear that again; you say your Master calls you up by six a Clock in the Morning to come to Prayers.

Will. Yes, and that is, I say, just as they do in the Monasteries: *I know 'tis so*, for I had a Cousin that was a Nun, and made her Escape out of a Nunnery, and she is turn'd Protestant, and she used to tell me they were obliged to rise at such Hours in the Night to go to Prayers, I wonder my Master don't do so too; I don't question but in a little time he will, and we shall be all Monks instead of Clothiers.

Tho. But, *Brother Will*, you must do your Master Justice now, for, if I mistake not, you wrong him very much by your own Account, *as I was going to say.*

Will. How *Brother*? I don't wrong him at all.

Tho. Why, you suppose of him he takes the Time he spends in those religious Things out of your Sleep, or out of the Time when you ought to be in Bed, and you think that an Injury to you, because you work hard; pray what time do your hir'd Journey-men come to Work in a Morning?

Will. At six a Clock.

Tho. Well, and do they actually go to work by Six a Clock?

Will. Yes, why not, is not that the usual time?

Tho. Yes *Brother*, but then you say your Master does not call you up till Six, and then he goes to Prayers; now if he did not go to Prayers, he would go to work, and you could not expect but to be at work, who are his Apprentices, as well as the Journeymen; so that the Time he spends at Prayer, he takes out of your Working-time, and not out of your Sleeping-time, and the Loss is his own, not yours; I think there you do your Master Wrong, *Brother*.

Will. What care I whose Time it is; I wonder what need there is for making such a Pother, I am as tir'd as a Dog with it; I warrant they don't do so at your House.

Tom. Our House, *Will!* No indeed we are not troubled with it, I never heard a Chapter read, or a Word spoke of Prayer since I came into the House, and that's as much my Uneasiness, as this is yours.

Will. You are very happy, *Brother*, I wish I had been in such a Place.

Tho. I cannot be of your Mind, *Brother*, what makes you talk so wickedly?

Will. What do you mean by wickedly? I say you are happy that you are not tormented as I am.

Tho. Ay, *Will*, but at the same time all this that torments you, is, your Master calls you up in the Morning, and keeps you up at Night to do your Duty, and what you ought to love, I mean, to go to Prayers, *and the like*.

Will.

Will, Why ay, Is not that Torment enough? What do you tell me of their Prayers and Duty? I desire none of it not I.

Tho. You make me tremble *Will*; I am frighted at you.

Will. Frighted! at what?

Tho. Why, if I should talk as you do, I shou'd be afraid the Devil would take me away alive: Do you know what you are talking of!

Will. Yes sure, I speak plain enough.

Tho. Why, is not all you complain of, nothing but serving God, as they are commanded to do, and are we not all to do so too, if we would be sav'd?

Will. Prethee *Thomas*, don't thou talk Gospel too; I ben't against their serving God, not I.

Tho. But you a'n't for doing it your self tho', and you speak contemptibly of the Thing it self.

Will. I don't know what belongs to it, not I; what need they make such a-do about it?

Tho. About what, *Will?* what, about serving God!

Will. No, about their saying so many Prayers.

Tho. You are mighty uneasie, methinks, about saying your Prayers; is not that serving God? I am amaz'd at you, indeed, *Will.*

Will. Why, but as I told you, *Brother*, that is not all.

Tho. No, is not that all? what then?

Will. No nor half; for every Night in the Week we must read every one a Chapter, and there our Master tells us a long Story of something or other about what we read; and asks us a great many foolish Questions, that I

can give no Answer to; then every Sunday we are examin'd about what the Minister said at Church, I never heard of such blind Doings; *why*, how should I remember what he says, may be I am at Play without Doors, or in the Church-yard half the time.

Tho. Well but *Brother*, you should not, you ought not to do so, *you know that*, I hope; and I suppose your Master puts you to remember what the Minister says, that you may be oblig'd to stay, and hear him, as you should do; I think he is very kind to you, I wish I had such a Master, *Will.*

Will. I don't value such Kindness, let him be kind to me in other things.

Tho. Why, can any thing be kinder than to keep you from doing what you should not do, I mean playing in the Fields or Streets, or Church-yard all Sermon time.

Will. Yes, I would fain have him let me go Home every Sunday to my Father's, that would be kind to me, but he won't let me do that.

Tho. Brother, that would not mend the matter, to be sure your Father would take care you should go to Church all the Day, and go to Prayers again at Night, and you say you can't abide that.

Will. You are quite mistaken in my Father, he is none of them; he goes to Church himself indeed, but he never troubles himself to hinder us, we may go where we will for all him; if he would but let me go home to my Father, I should do well enough.

Tho. Well, nor don't your Father call you to Prayers at Night?

Will.

Will. No indeed, nothing like it, he knows better things.

Tho. What, nor a Sunday Night neither!

Will. No, nor a Sunday Night neither; Prayers! I dare say no body ever heard my Father say any Prayers in his Life, except when his Horse fell on him, and broke his Thigh, and every body thought he would ha' died, or must have had his Thigh cut off; then he sent for the Minister indeed, and they had a deal of Prayers in the Chamber, I remember; but as soon as that was over, and my Father was well again, he never troubled his Head any more with it, what should he for, there was no need of it then, you know.

Tho. For the Lord's sake, *Will*, do not talk so!

[Thomas *starts as if he was frighted.*

Will. What do you mean? What do I talk?

Tho. Talk! why you talk Blasphemy almost; you have been dreadfully Educated, *Will*; prethee what is your Father? is he a Protestant?

Will. Talk Blasphemy! what do you mean, *Tom?* what did I say?

Tho. Say! Why I am afraid to repeat what you said. [Tom *looks earnestly upon him, and upon the Ground about him.*

Will. What makes you look at me so, *Brother*, you look as if you were scared; what ails you?

Tom. Truly, *Will*, you have terrified me; I was looking at you, to see if you did not begin to look pale, and stagger, for I wondred God did not strike you dead when you talk'd so horridly.

Will. And what did you look about upon the Ground for?

Tho.

Tho. To see whether it did not begin to cleave and part; for I expect every Moment it should open and swallow you up!

Will. You Fool you, what do you mean?

Tho. Indeed, I should have expected all that, if I had said so. [*Mark the tenderness of the Child that was religiously Educated.*

Will. What did I say, that you make such a stir about it.

Tho. Truly, *Will*, I wish you would consider a little your self what you said, or at least, what you meant, when you said your Father knew better than to pray to God, and that, after your Father had broke his Thigh, and was well again, there was no need of praying to God: Are not these dreadful Words, *Will!*

Will. No, I think not; what Harm is there in them? I thought no Harm, not I.

Tho. But are you in earnest, *Will*, when you say your Father never prays to God?

Will. Nay, *Tom*, I did not say never; I told you he went to Church a Sundays.

Tho Well, but never else, never at Home; never call'd his Family to Prayers, as your Master you say, does.

Will. No, never in his Life, that ever I heard of.

Tho. Why, what is your Father? Is he a Heathen or a Christian? Is he a Papist or a Protestant?

Will. My Father a Heathen! no I think not; he is as good a Christian as any of our Neighbours.

Tho. Ay! that's strange; I thought there had been no Christians liv'd so, *Will*: Is he a Protestant or a Papist?

Will.

Will Why, a Protestant, what should he be o you think; my Father a *Papist!* No indeed ny Father's as good a Protestant as any of you; id not I tell you he went to Church every Sunlay, nay, sometimes, *especially when it is bad veather*, he goes to the Meeting-house, because he Church is a good way off.

Tho. Will, Will, I never heard the like, nor aw the like till I came to my Master; I thank God have never been bred up among such Christiins, or among such Protestants, I thought there had been no such Protestants in the World; nay, there is a popish Family lives next Door to my Father's, and they are constantly Morning and Evening, and often at other times of the Day too, at their Worship and Prayers, serving God in their Way; nay, I have heard, the *Turks* say their Prayers five times a Day: Why, it is natural to pray to God, *Will, Did not he make us?*

Will. I can't dispute, not I; what do you call serving God? Is not going to Church serving God? I told you my Father went every Sunday to Church, I think that's serving God, is n't it? And he may say his Prayers at home too for ought I know; I suppose he does not tell Folks when he does that, as my Master does, who makes all the House hear of it.

Tho. But, Brother Will, thou talk'st as if thou had'st been bred a Heathen, and not a Protestant; Prethee *Will*, did st ever read the Bible?

Will. Yes, I learnt to read in it at School.

Tho. Was that all? did you never read at Home? What, have you never a Bible in the House?

Will.

Will Yes, we have a great Bible in the Parlour Window.

Tho. What, and does no body use it?

Will. Yes, my Mother reads in it sometimes, and my Father sets down how old his Children are, in it; there's the Time when we were all Born.

Tho. But you never us'd to be bid to read in it by your Father or Mother?

Wil. Yes, my Mother would sometimes call me from Play, to come and read my Book, but I would not come, I lov'd my Play too well for that.

Tho. What, would not you come!

Wil. No, not I.

Tho. What, not when your Mother call'd you!

Wil. Mother! no, what car'd I for my Mother.

Tho. I never heard the like in my Life; why 'tis a sign you never read the Bible.

Wil. Why, what if I had?

Tho. Why there you would have read, *Cursed be he that sets light by his Father or Mother*, *Deut.* 27. 16. Besides, *Will*, cannot you say the Ten Commandments?

Wil. Yes, I think I can.

Will. Well, and don't you remember the Fifth Commandment, *Honour thy Father and thy Mother?*

Wil. Why, what's that to my going to Play?

Tho. But it was something to your refusing to come and read your Book when your Mother call'd you.

Wil. What signified that? I knew my Mother was not angry, she did not much trouble her Head whether I came in to read or no.

Tho.

Tho. So indeed it is plain as you said, that neither your Father or your Mother troubled their Heads about you, whether you served God or no! I do not wonder that you think it so troublesome that your Master goes to Prayers, and serves God in his Family; I wonder how you, that have been Bred so wickedly, came to be put out to so religious a Family as your Master is!

Wil. Why, I heard my Father say once, before I came to my Master, that he was the willinger to put me to him, because he was a good Man, and I might learn good Things there, for I had never learnt any at home.

Tho. So that your Father owns then, *Will*, that these are good things, tho' he does not practise them himself, that is very strange, *Will!*

Wil. Yes, yes, My Fathrr us'd to say he lov'd my Master, because he was a good Man, and that he was a Man kept good Orders in his Family; and one Day he told me, that if I was a good Boy, and follow'd my Master's Advice, I should be made a good Man, better than ever my Father was, and that my Master went to Prayers, and served God, and such as that, but I knew nothing what he meant; if I had known how it was, I should never have come.

Tho. Why, you own, that tho' your Father did not call you to Prayers himself, he lik'd your Master the better because he did, why should not you too?

Wil. Not I, I lov'd to live as I had been bred.

Tho. But you see your Father own'd that your Master was a better Christian than himself, and that

that the Orders he kept in his Family, was the way to make you a good Man, nay, to make you better than your Father too; methinks you should believe your Father.

Will. I don't know as to that, but I don't like it, not I.

Tho. You are then not for being made a good Man, or else you don't believe your Father.

Will. I don't see how he'll make me any better than I am; I tell you I don't like it at all, I dare say you would not like it neither.

Tho. Would I not! I wish I was to be try'd, *Will.*

Will. I wish you were, I am sure you would be sick of it.

Tho. Why now, Brother *Will*, that cannot be, for my Grievance is just the contrary to yours, for I have been the uneasiest Boy alive; I have got a Master that lives exactly like your Father.

Will. My Father! Alas my Father is but an ordinary Man, your Master is an Alderman.

Tho. I mean as to Religion, *Will*; 'tis true my Master goes to the Meeting-house, and my Mistress goes to Church, and they serve God there after their Way, and we have nothing of Swearing, Cursing, or Drunkenness in the House or such as that, I must do them that Justice but as to Religion, I never heard a Word of it in the House since I came to it.

Will. *Well now*, and yet every body says your Master is a very good Man.

Tho. That may be.

Will. Why then, *Brother*, you see you were mistaken before, when you fancied a Man could no

not be a good Man without making such a Pother about his Praying and his Religion, as my Master does; I do not see that my Master is a jot better Man than yours.

Tho. Nay, *Will*, it was not I was mistaken, it was your own Father was mistaken, who, you acknowledge, told you, *he loved your Master because he was a good Man*, and *that you might learn good things there, and that if you followed your Master's Advice you would be a good Man too, and a better Man than your Father*; he must be mistaken in all that, *Will.*

Will. Well, but I a'n't talking of my Father, they may be any of them better than my Father, he knows that himself; but I speak of your Master, every body says he is *a good Man*, and a religious Man, and he has the best Reputation in the Town.

Tho. Ay, Will, he is an honest Man, a very fair Man, he does no body any Wrong, but I have never been bred that Way in my Life; I have never heard any such thing as Praying to God, or reading the Scriptures in the House since I came hither, and yet when I came to him I was told he was a mighty religious Man.

Will. Why, *that's what I say*, he is counted a religious Man, and they say he goes to the *Meeting-houses* too.

Tho. So much the worse for him, if he appear religious only, and his Practice makes him appear to be otherwise; however, I will not say what he is privately, but this I am sure of, it does not appear in his Family, we that are Servants see nothing of it, nor his Children either.

Will.

Will. *Why*, that is as I would have it be at our House; he is a very good Man, every body says so, and what need he trouble you with it? I don't like this making such a Show of Religion; can't they be Religious but they must trouble all the Family with it? I believe your *Master* is a very honest good Man, *Tom*, tho' he makes no Show of it, as mine does.

Tho. You talk prophanely again, *Will*, *I am no more for making a Show of Religion than you*, but *if there be no Religion where there is some Show of it, to be sure there is no Religion where there is* no Show *at all of it*; but what do you call *Show*? Is it not every Christian Man's Duty to teach his Houshold and Family to serve God? Do you call that a Show? Every one ought to make such a Show of Religion, and if he does not, he plainly makes a Show of having very little Religion himself: I might give you a great many Places out of Scripture for this, but it seems you han't read much out of the Bible.

Will. Why, what would you have your Master do? You would not have him make such a Rout as my Master does, would you?

Tho. I would have him serve God in his Family, as other religious good People do.

Will. Well, but you say they all serve God a Sundays.

Tho. What's that to his Family? we may run about where we will for all him, Sabbath-day, or any Day or Night, he never takes any Thought for us, if we are but in the Counting-house next Morning *when he wants us*, we may serve God or the Devil, it's all one to him.

Will.

Will. That's what I want now; *I wonder* you hould be uneasie at it.

Tho. I have not been used to such a Life, *Will*, ho' you have; it terrifies me so I cannot bear it.

Will. Why what would you have? what is it o you what your Master does?

Tho. A great deal; God has said, *He will pour ut his Fury upon the Families that call not upon his Name*, Jer. 10. 25. And I am one of the Fa-ily now.

Will. Well, but can you not say your Prayers y your self?

Tho. Truly I have no manner of convenience or that neither, for we all lie together in a Room, and at first I us'd to kneel down and ray by my self, but the rest of the Apprentices eer'd me out of it, and made such a Noise at ne, I was forc'd to leave it off, and now I go o Bed and rise like a Beast, as they do; but it grieves me so, I cannot tell what to do, for I am ure it is a Sin to do so, and I am afraid God hould show some Judgment upon me for it.

Will. Why, is there any danger of that *Tom*! why, I never prayed to God in my Life.

Tho. Then you are in a sad Condition, *Will*, nd so am I too; sometimes I think it will break ny Heart; I think my Father has put me in the Devil's Mouth, and I am going the strait Road o Hell, I am sure he does not do so himself.

Will. And so you have left off saying your Prayers, *Tom*, now quite; han't you? and then you live as bad as I do, don't you?

Tho. No I han't left off praying neither; for

if my Master does but send me of an Errand, I Pray as I go along the Streets; and sometimes I get up into the Hay-loft over the Stable, or any where that I can be private, but this is so seldom, and it grieves me so, that when I come to pray, I can do nothing but cry, I can't speak a Word hardly.

Will. I do not understand these things; sure I am a strange Creature! why, it never troubles me; I don't know what 'tis to pray to God, I never knew there was any harm in not doing it; I wish I could learn, I'd say my Prayers too.

[*The Boy begins to be touch'd with the Discourse.*

Tho. You have a good Master to teach you; I have a Master will do nothing but teach me to forget all that my good Father and Mother have been teaching me these fifteen Years.

Will. Why, if what you learnt is good, what need you forget it?

Tho. Why, I'll tell you, *Will*, when I was at Home, and had all the Encouragment in the World by the Example and Instruction of my Father, and the Exhortation of my Mother, telling me my Duty, and strictly charging me never to lie down or rise without praying to God, in the Evening for Protection, in the Morning for Direction; yet I found a wicked Inclination within me, often prompting me to omit my Duty, *and now* when I want these Helps of Example and Instruction, and instead of them have had so many Discouragements, and find it so difficult to get a retir'd Place for it, I find that wicked Inclination to omit my Duty, encreases; and sometimes I am for perswading my self I have a sufficient

ficient Excuse to leave it quite off, and I am afraid some time or other I shall do so, and so grow an Atheist, and then I shall live without God, *like a Heathen*, just as you do, *Will.*

Will. Indeed, *Tom*, I have liv'd like a Heathen all my Days, I begin to see it now, but what must I do? How can I help it now?

Tho. Do *Will!* You must leave it off, and learn to live a better Life.

Will. But, *Brother Tom*, how must I do that? I am a poor ignorant Wretch, *I know nothing at all*, I have never been taught any thing in my Life; if to live as I do, is to be a Heathen, my Father is a Heathen, and my Mother is a Heathen, and my Brothers and Sisters are all Heathens.

Tho. You are in a sad Condition, *Will*, as I said before, and I think I am in a worse.

Will. How can that be, *Tom?*

Tho. VVhy, you have been taught nothing, and I am in a fair way to lose all I have been taught; I think my Condition is worse than yours.

Will. No, no, You know what to do, and what you ought to do, you have been well Educated, *Tom*, I have no body to teach me any thing: Tell me dear Brother, what I must do; teach me what is my first Duty, I begin to see something very desirable in Religion, that I never valued before.

[*The first Motions in an uncultivated Mind generally are to see a Beauty in the Ways of God, and to have a Desire to imitate them.*

Tho. VVhy, *VVill*, I am but a Boy as well as you, and can't teach you much, but I can tell you what my Father used to tell me, and what he taught me to do.

Will. *Do*, tell me that then, for I long to hear.

Tho. Why, he used to tell me, that *God made me*, and that being born in Sin of corrupt Parents, and liable to Eternal Death for Sin, *Jesus Christ* redeemed me.

Will. All that I have heard too, tho' I do not understand a word of it.

Tho. Then he told me, I must every Day pray to God *to bless me*, *to preserve* me, and *to pardon* my Sins for *Jesus Christ's* sake; that I must give Thanks to him *for my Life* and *my Preservation* in Health, and for all things that *I receive*; that I must pray to him for my daily Bread, and to give me Wisdom and Direction in all I go about.

Will. How can I do this?

Tho. I remember I ask'd my Father that very Question, and he answer'd me thus: Do you not come to me, Child, when you want Cloaths, and ask me for them; and to your Mother when you are hungry, and ask for Victuals; and do you not do this without teaching?

Will. And what did you say?

Tom. What could I say? I kneel'd down every Night and Morning and said over the Lord's Prayer, then I got a good Prayer out of a Book, and said that, and sometimes a word or two would come into my Thoughts, that I would say of my own Head, as I thought of such things as were proper.

Will. I shall never learn! why, I can hardly say over the Lord's Prayer without Book!

Tho. I'll tell you, *Will*, if I thought you were in earnest, I would do my Endeavour to teach you, but you that have led such a wicked Life, and

and cry out of your Master and Mistress so much about Praying, I don't think you mean any thing but to jest with me.

Will. No, but I do not jest now; you say it is so wicked a thing, and I am in such a dangerous Condition, that you look'd for the Ground to open and swallow me up; why, you can't think I would be willing to have the Devil take me away, *whatever I may say sometimes*; but I am a poor ignorant Boy, how shall I know what to do?

Tho. Truly, *Will*, and I also am but ignorant, as I said before, and unfit to teach you, I am but a Boy, you know, *but this I know, and have been taught*, that God has made me; do you believe that, *Will?*

Will. Yes, sure!

Tho. Well, if God made you, then, he can destroy you.

Will. That is plain.

Tho. Then sure, 'tis your Interest to serve God, as well in Thankfulness to him because he made you, as that he may not be provoked to destroy you.

Will. But what is this serving God? I thought it was nothing but going to Church a Sundays.

Tho. To be sure worshipping God at Church is good, and our Duty, but we must worship God otherways than at Church.

Will. What, by saying our Prayers?

Tho. Nay, that is not all neither; we must fear God, and keep his Commandments.

Will. How shall I do all that? you know that I know nothing of it.

Tom. Why therefore, *Will*, your first thing is,

and the first thing my Father told me I was to do, was to pray to God to teach me to know him, and to fear him, and to keep his Commandments.

Will. How do I know what his Commandments are? I can say the Ten Commandments, but I don't understand what they mean.

Tho. Why, my Father next directed me to read the Bible, which is the Word of God, and is given for our Instruction, that we may know his Will.

Will. And will that teach me to know what to do?

Tho. Reading the Scripture daily, and praying to God daily to open our Understanding, to know the Will of God written in his Word, certainly this must be the way, *Will.*

Will. I can't Pray, I never pray'd in all my Life, *I tell you.*

Tho. You ought to tremble at the Thought of that, *Will!*

Will. I begin to be afraid indeed, it may be God won't hear me now, if I should Pray.

Tho. Yes, there's a Scripture for that to encourage you; *Let the Wicked forsake his way, and the Unrighteous Man his Thoughts, and let him return unto the Lord, and he will have Mercy,* Isaiah 55. 7.

Will. Is that in the Bible?

Tho. Yes, and a great many more encouraging things; You must read the Scripture diligently: Have you never a Bible?

Will. No, *not I,* nor never had in my Life.

Tho. I am not capable to direct you, *Will*; but I will tell you there are two Things which I would

I would have you do, pray to God to forgive your Sins, and to teach you his Will, and read the Bible diligently, I'll give you a Bible, *Will.*

Will. Indeed, Brother *Tom*, if you will give me a Bible, I'll read it *over* and *over*, you say that will teach me; *I'll read it*, and thank you for it heartily, for I never had a Bible to read in yet.

Tho. But remember, *Will, I said* you must pray to God to teach you when you read; to open your Understanding, that you may understand the Scriptures; and to teach you that you may know your Duty; and then pray to God to guide you in the doing his Will, and your Duty, according to the Scripture, which is his own Word.

Will. What will my praying to God signifie? Will God do this for me, if I pray to him! and how can I pray! I don't know what praying is, *not I*; what must I say?

Tho. It seems you do not know what Prayer is; sure, if you remember the beginning of our Discourse, and how you complain'd you were tormented with Prayers at Home, you will not say, you do not know what it is.

Will. Don't tell me of that now, *dear Tom*, I begin to be of another Mind already; I wish I knew how to Pray for my self.

Tho. The Spirit of God teaches us to pray, and helps our Infirmities; do you know the Story of the poor Publican?

Will. No not I, *what was he?*

Tho. Just such another as thou art, *Will*, a poor, wicked, prophane Wretch, that had liv'd all his Days in Wickedness, and perhaps without Prayer too.

Will. And what then? what became of him? Did he go to Hell?

Tho. Why, he saw the Pharisees, and all the great Professors of Religion, go up to the Temple to pray, and being sensible of his Condition, he thought once to go up along with them; but when he consider'd what a wicked Creature he had been, he was afraid; he durst *not only* not go, but not look towards the Temple, nor cast his Eyes up to Heaven.

Will. That is my Case, indeed, exactly: Pray what became of him?

Tho. Why, he stood at a distance, smote his Breast, astonish'd and amaz'd at his own Case, and with a deep Sigh, broke out thus: *Lord be merciful to me a Sinner!* Luke 18. 13.

Will. Well, and was he heard? You say, he durst not go up to the Temple to Pray.

Tho. Heard, Yes; one Groan, one Sigh, one Look, nay, a Heart not daring to look, sending out but one Sentence, yet from a broken, sincere repenting Heart, is heard in Heaven beyond the long and loud Pretences and Devotions of the self-opinion'd Hypocrite: *The Scripture says expressly*, this Man went away justified rather than the other. *Luke* 18. 14.

Will. And do you think, if I knew how to Pray, God would hear me, and give all that Teaching and Knowledge you speak of, to me?

Tho. Yes, Will, I do more than think so, I am sure of it.

Will. What mean you by that?

Tho. I have God's own Word for it, *Will*, and that Word is the Foundation and Comfort of all

all the Prayer, and of all the praying Christians in the World.

Will. How is this? explain your self, for you speak strangely positive.

Tho. The Scripture says he will, and that is my Assurance, *and may be yours*; for it is his own Word, *John* 16 23. *WHATEVER we ask of the Father in the Name of Jesus Christ, he will do it for us.*

Will. But I have been a wicked Boy all my Days, that never thought of any thing of God or Religion in my Life, as you know very well by what I have told you, nor ever was taught any thing about it; will God hear such a one as I, if I ever pray to him?

Tho. The same Scripture says, he will, *Brother*, and we have no reason to doubt it, for the Scriptures are the Word of God; and, *as I told you*, the Scripture says, *Isaiah* 55 7. *Let the wicked forsake his way, and turn unto the Lord, and he will have Mercy*, and the poor Publican went away justified that sent up but one Sigh.

Will. AY, that may be, to such as sin now and then a little, but I have done nothing else all my Days.

Tho. But he says in the same Text, *that he will abundantly Pardon.*

Will. But that may not reach me.

Tho. But the Scripture is full of *PROMISES*, and calls to as Bad as you, to come to him; I could shew you some, if I had the Bible here; you can't have been so wicked but you are included in them.

Will. Tell me one of them, I intreat you, I

see

see you have a deal of it without Book, *dear Tom* tell me one of them.

Tho. This is one; *Him that comes unto me, I will in no wise cast out:* Here is no Exception; this *Him* is all one as *WHOSOEVER.*

Will. WHOSOEVER! that's a large word, is there no Exception?

Tho. None at all; *WHOSOEVER,* that includes how bad soever.

Will. What, and *how LONG soever* too?

Tho. Ay, and *how long soever*; *WHOSOEVER* turns unto God, *how bad SOEVER* they are, or *how long SOEVER* they have been so bad, yet he will *in no wise,* or by no means, *cast them out.*

Will. My Heart revives at that Word, for I have been a sad Wretch you know, *Brother,* I have never so much as thought of my Soul, or of God, of his making me, or his Power to destroy me; I have never pray'd unto him, or call'd upon him, unless in wicked Swearing and Cursing by his Name; will God pardon me! *Brother,* are you sure of it?

Tho. I cannot be sure he will pardon you, or my self either; but I am sure it is your Duty to pray for Pardon, and to repent of your Sins; and there is another Scripture, which says, *If we repent and forsake, we shall find Mercy.*

Will. Repent, what's that, *Tom?*

Tom. Repentance is a hearty Sorrow for your Sins already past, and solemn, serious Resolutions to commit no more; and this Sorrow must proceed not only from a Fear of Eternal Punishment, but from a Hatred of Sin, for its own evil Nature, and as it is offensive to the Holiness of God.

Will.

Will. I cannot understand this at all; shall I learn it in my Bible, *Brother?* How must I learn to repent?

Tho. You must pray to God to give you Repentance too, for *Repentance is the Gift of God.*

Will. I will pray to God, tho' I do not know how, or what to say; I am amaz'd at my self when I see what a wicked Creature I have been; indeed *Brother Tom,* I don't wonder that you look'd so earnestly at me, and expected I should drop down dead, or be swallow'd up alive; I am afraid I shall be so still. [*Conviction of Sin seizes the Boy.*

Tho. I am glad what I have said has made you sensible of it.

Will. I begin to love you, *dear Brother,* better than ever I did, I shall be the better for you as long as I live.

Tho. I wish you had some better Instructor than I.

Will. Ay, Brother, if I had had a religious Father and Mother, *as you have had,* I might have known all this from a Child, then all the past Wickedness of my Life had been prevented; but you say *WHOSOEVER, Brother,* don't you? Are you sure the Words are so?

Tho. I am very sure, *Brother*; but, to make you easie, I'll go in and fetch you a Bible, and shew it you presently. [*The Boy goes in.*

[*while he is gone,* Will *breaks out thus* by himself

Will What must I do to know how to Pray! will God hear such a Wretch! and what if not! then I am undone, lost and damn'd for ever! O what a Condition am I in! but *WHOSOEVER.*

[*The Boy weeps, but recovering, prays with great Affection, and aloud, like the poor Publican, in the following Words:*

Lord

Lord God that has made me, and hast said, *WHOSOEVER* comes, *thou wilt not cast out*, pardon all my Wickedness.

[THOM *comes and overhears him.*

Tho. What was you saying, *Brother?* did you speak to me?

Will. No, no, I did not speak to you.

Tho. I heard you say something.

Will. I hardly know what I said, but my Heart struck me, and I cried out.

Tho. To God, I hope.

Will. I hardly know, yet I feel a secret Joy in what I said. [*Observe here, Conviction was accompanied with a cleaving to the Promise of God, and the Spirit of God moves the poor Boy's Heart to look up to God, in hope, first pleading the Promise, and then crying for Pardon.*

Tho. Well, Brother, if it was but like the Publican, it may be heard.

Will. I know not what it was, but I am trembling still; *Is this Praying*, Brother?

Tho. The more your Affection was engaged, the more likely it is to be from a true work of God.

Will. Have you brought the Bible? You have staid a long while.

Tho. I have been looking some Places for you.

Will. And will you shew me them?

Tho. Yes, I have folded 'em down, and here they are, in the first Place, here's that I nam'd to you, *John* 6. 10 *Him that comes unto me, I will in no wise cast out*; and here is another place, which is equal in its Encouragements, and expressly tells us, that the word *HIM* is to be taken for *WHOSO*

OEVER, without any exception of Person, as
said to you before, *Rev.* 22. 17 *Let him that*
athirst come, and WHOSOEVER WILL, let
hem take of the water of Life freely.

Will. You have folded them down, you say,
ll read them when I come home, for it is too
ate for us to stay any longer.

The End of the First Dialogue.

Notes *on the First Dialogue.*

THO' this Dialogue, and indeed, this whole part of the Book, is more a History than the rest, and that the Families which it points at, if they happen to see it, may be able to see themselves in it, and to make some Use of it to their own Advantage, if they please: Yet as even this History will be the same thing as a Parable to the Ages to come, in which it may, I hope, be as useful as now; and, *above all*, as this Work is design'd for a general, not a particular Reproof, I am willing to let it lie hid entirely *as to Persons*, that it may, perhaps, look less by that means like a History, than really it is.

If the Persons whom it more nearly concerns, may see themselves reproved, they will make not the less profitable Use of it, for the Civility shown them in concealing their Names; if they do not, the Author can never want Opportunity to expose the Folly, *if he sees Cause.*

But

But the Design of this Book is of a Nature above a personal Satyr; the Errors in Family-Conduct are the Business here, not the Families themselves; and the Names and Persons are so entirely conceal'd, and the real History so couch'd, that it is impossible for any body, but the Persons themselves, to read the People by the Characters.

The first thing reproved here, and worth observing, is a good Man, who had carefully educated and instructed his Child, and who *he might easily see*, was a sober, well-inclin'd Youth, knowing in good Things, and desirous of them; yet had this religious Parent forgotten himself, and so far forgotten the Good of his Child also, as to place him out with a Master who had either no Religion at all, *or, which was all one to the Child*, exercised none of it in his Family; nor took any Care, or had any Concern for the Souls of his Servants, whatever he had for their Bodies.

The Child laments this very pathetically, tho' in a familiar way, to his Comrade; he is at first weary of the prophane way of living, and then justly afraid that the Interruptions he meets with to his Duty, should bring him to an Indifference about it, and to believe the Difficulties he found in his way, were just Excuses for him in omitting it totally at last.

NOTE, We have natural Hindrances enough in the way of our Duty, from the Aversions of a corrupt Nature, so that at best we shall be often backward in, and prompted to, the Omission of religious Performances; we have therefore great Need to remove all occasional Obstructions, lest Natural Inclination should

should plead those Obstructions as a just Reason for a total Neglect of Duty.

It was not without a just Reason that the poor Child entertain'd a Jealousie of himself, lest he should grow cold in religious Matters, from the general Discouragement he met with in a Family where all religious Duties were totally neglected, and himself made a Jest for attempting to do his Duty.

This may be a seasonable Caution for such Parents who have any Concern for the Souls of their Children, and have taken any Pains with them in their Education.

1. Not to think their Duty discharg'd to them in the due instructing and educating them in their Infancy, the Inspection of a Parent does not end there, but they ought,
2. To remember that all that good Seed, which they had sown, may be choak'd, if the Child comes into bad hands afterward, and their Son may be lost by a negligent Master, as well as a negligent Parent.
3. *That therefore*, it is their Duty to take care to place their Children in religious Families, or it may be true, that they had almost as good never have instructed them at all.

It is very strange, *but too common*, that religious Parents, who have taken great Care with their Children, when they were at home, wholly neglect this, and throw their Children away, by placing them where the Duties of Religion are not at all regarded; and where the Examples of their Masters, and the Families they live in, quite Raze all the Remembrance of former Instruction

out

out of the Mind of the Servant, and they grow hardned in that Neglect by the Authority of their Masters.

It is remarkable here farther, how the Duty of Servants is entirely neglected, even in those Families where they do regard Religion, and where instructing of Children is taken care of; as if the Souls of Servants were not under the Inspection of the Master of a Family, and were none of his Charge, as well as the Souls of his Children.

NOTE. Apprentices taken into our Houses, ought, as far as it respect their Souls, to be reckon'd as Children; for as we take them from the Tuition of their Parents, if we act not the Parent to them as well as the Master, we may teach them their Trade, but we breed them up for the Devil.

It cannot be omitted here to observe what impressions of Religion; what awe of God; what dread of his Judgments the good Instructions of the Father had left on the Mind of this Youth.

1. In his Uneasiness of being placed in an irreligious Family; *of which afterwards.*
2. His Aversion to the Discourse of his Comrade, when he talk'd prophanely.
3. His terrible Apprehensions when the other talk'd Blasphemously, lest he should fall down dead, or the Earth should open, and swallow him up.

NOTE. Tho' 'tis true, that in the ordinary Course of Providence God does not deal so with those that blaspheme and provoke him, yet since sometimes God has done so, and History, as well as Scripture, is full of dreadful

Exam-

Examples of that kind, it is not without its Uses, and therefore very commendable to acquaint young Children with such Examples, and to fill their Minds with a due Fear of God's Judgments in the like Cases.

Here is room also for a useful Remark in the Complaint the poor Child makes, that having no Retirement for performing his Duty by himself; when he went about it publickly, the other Servants mock'd and jeer'd him out of it.

NOTE, (1) Tho' separate Conveniences cannot always be made for Servants, yet Masters should, as much as may consist with the Circumstances of their Families, be cautious of taking away all manner of Conveniences of Retirement from their Servants, lest they furnish them with Excuses for not doing their Duty.

NOTE, (2.) Jeering and mocking a Young-Man for his inclining to be Religious, is too often a Means to drive such quite from it.

NOTE, (3.) One of the most necessary Preservations of Youth, is, That he be fortified against the scandalous Banters and Insults of of his Companions; and can learn to be jeer'd, and yet not jeer'd out of his Duty.

The other part of this Dialogue affords a dreadful Instance of a Father and Family wholly destitute of Religion, living entirely without God, without Scripture, without so much as a Form of Religion: The Effects of this are especially two, and both visible in the Case here laid before us.

1. Perfect Ignorance of every thing that look'd like Religion in the Child, not so much as the least Sence of it, or Desire to know any thing about it remaining.
2. Certain and never-failing bitter Reproaches of the Child against the Parent, when its Eyes come to be opened.

NOTE. Such is the Beauty of a religious, conscientious Life in those that practise it, that those who can taste nothing of it themselves, yet have a Value for it in others: The prophane Boy's Father told him, he lov'd his Master *because he was a good Man*, and that if he (the Boy) would take his Master's Advice, he would make him a better Man than his Father.

NOTE. The Aversions which want of Instruction in this Youth had bred in him against the Religious Behaviour of his Master, and against the publick Exercises of Religion in his Family, were so fooliſhly grounded, that they would bear no weight in his discoursing it, *even with a Child*; and therefore the Religious Youth presently objects against what he says, and he himself sooner sees the Folly of his own Discourse; and yet the Author of this Work is just also to the thing it self, for that really our ridiculous Notions in Contempt of Religion, will admit no better Argument to excuse them.

Aversions to Religious Duties grow natural either by Dis-use of those Duties, or by the Disaster of an ill Education, even where the poor hardned Child may think no Harm, or design any willful

Rebel-

Rebellion against God, that Ignorance being the natural Consequence of want of Instruction.

Observe here, when the wicked Boy being convinc'd, asks his Comrade what he must do, he goes back to tell him what his own Father used to teach him: Whence *note*, that well instructing our Children makes them capable to instruct others, *as Occasion presents*, and consequently their Children, when they come to have Families of their own.

From the beginning of the wicked Boy's Convictions, *Note*, that sence of Danger is the first thing ordinarily that discovers it self in conviction of Sin, and this leads to enquiring after what we are next to do; as the Jailor who first came in trembling, then asks, *What must I do?*

When the Boy, after his first Conviction, recollects things by himself, *while his Companion is gone for the Bible*, he is struck with horror at his Condition, but the Spirit of God working graciously in him, lays the Promise of God, *as it were*, full in his way, in order to give him hope, and at the first appearance of hope he breaks out vehemently in Prayer; when his Comrade returns, and innocently inquires about what he said, it appears from him, that his Prayer was a kind of Extasie, mov'd by a supernatural Power in his Heart, that affected him in a violent manner, so that he hardly could give an Account of it himself, but says wildly, *he trembled and cried out.*

There are, no doubt, such strong Impressions of the Spirit of God accompanying true Convictions, and the great regenerating Work of Grace in the Heart, as may be inexpressible, even by

the Persons themselves, yet far from *Enthusiastick*, or affected, nor are these Impressions to be slighted, much less ridicul'd; perhaps this may be in part signified in Regeneration, being called a *New Birth*, tho' the main Intent of that Allusion be to signifie the entire Change of the State.

From the whole of this Dialogue may be observ'd the great Duty and Advantage of Young Men spending the Hours they have to spare for Conversation, in religious Discourses, and enquiring of one another about things relating to Heaven, their Duty here, and their Way thither: this, no doubt, was enjoin'd in the same Text where the Instruction of our Children is commanded, *Deut. 6. 7. Thou shalt talk of them when thou sittest in thine House, and when thou walkest by the Way: THAT IS*, they shall be the general Subject of your Conversation and Communication one with another. *Note*, The Advantages of religious Conversation are many, the present Case is formed to describe them; the young, untaught uninstructed Youth, who came out of the hands of his Parents, to be an Apprentice, as perfectly naked of Knowledge and Instruction, as he came naked into the World, becomes a Convert by his keeping Company, and conversing with a religious well instructed Companion, and became afterwards an excellent Promoter of Knowledge and Piety in the Place where he lived.

The Second DIALOGUE.

THE young Lad who was put Apprentice to the religious Tradesman above-mention'd, tho' he had no Education from his Parents, was, as you have heard in the past Dialogue between him and the Youth his Comrade, brought to a Condition quite different from what he had always been brought up in; he had a full Conviction of the desperate Condition he was in by reason of his sinful Nature and Life: He had receiv'd some Light from the little Instruction his young, but pious Companion, was capable to give him, and his Conscience was thorowly awaken'd; his little Instructor had been providentially made the Instrument to lay a Foundation of Hope in him, and to encourage him to pray to God, and to read the Scriptures, and to believe that God would receive him, would not reject him for his sinful Life, or for his sinful Nature, but would grant him *whatsoever* he should ask, and upon this Confidence in his first Agony he breaks out, as before, into a short, but vehement Prayer, being the first he had ever made in his Life; and which, as it was

made from a Heart deeply touch'd with the danger of his Soul, so it left great Impressions upon his Mind, as I have noted; and having gotten a Bible from his Companion, he goes away with two happy Resolves, (1.) to read, and (2.) to pray.

The Alteration this made in the Youth, could not be long hid in the Family where he was plac'd, where his wicked way of Living, his prophane Tongue, and his contempt of Religion, had made him not very well receiv'd, and made his Conversation so much their Aversion, that the Master of the House, and the Mistress too, had warn'd their little Children from conversing with him; and they had had some Discourse together about turning him away, finding him of a Temper, as they thought, too refractory to be wrought upon by Advice, past the Benefit of Example, and who had several times made a Jest of, and a Scoff at their Attempts to instruct him.

But the Boy being changed within, *as is noted above*, it could not be that such a Work could long conceal it self in his Conversation; he appear'd pensive, retir'd, and grave in his Deportment, was observ'd to *sigh* very often, and look as if he had been crying; as soon as his Business was over, he was never to be seen, but always hid in the Dark, among the Workhouses, of which his Master had several; he was observed to be always ready at the times of Family-worship, and on the Lord's Day, when his Master examin'd him about the Sermons he had heard, they were all surpriz'd at him, for the ready Account he gave of what the Minister had preached: His Master and Mistress, who could not but observe this

Alteration

Alteration in the Boy, took the more Notice of him in his Converſation the Week after, where they found him diligent at his Work, more than ever, but nothing of the Mirth and Sport his Fellow-Servants uſed to have with him: They obſerv'd he had left off all his ill Words, and wicked Expreſſions, Swearing, Curſing, *and the like*; he play'd none, laugh'd none, and hardly was ſeen to ſmile: Several of the Servants and Workmen that obſerv'd it alſo, had been jeſting with him, and ask'd him what ail'd him; but he gave them no Anſwers, that were to the purpoſe, ſo that it was hardly gueſs'd at in the Family, at leaſt, not among his Fellows.

But his Maſter and Miſtreſs, who from his Behaviour, *as above*, had entertain'd ſome Notion of it, or being willing to hope the beſt, had pleas'd themſelves with ſome Thoughts of the Child's being grown rather Serious, than Melancholly, made it their Buſineſs to obſerve him more narrowly; and ſeeing him one Evening take a Candle, and go up into a Room over their Workhouſe, by himſelf, the Miſtreſs ſilently followed him, and plac'd her ſelf ſo, as ſhe might ſee him, and he perceived nothing of it.

She found him ſet down the Candle, pull a Book out of his Pocket, and turn over the Leaves, folding up here, and folding down there, but not reading long in any one Place; ſhe obſerv'd him to ſigh grievouſly all the while, and at laſt, to throw down the Book, and burſt out into a vehement Fit of Crying, ſitting down upon the Ground, wringing his Hands, and the Tears running down his Face, but not ſpeak a Word.

While he was in this Agony, she discovers herself to have seen him, and begins thus:

WILL, *what's the Matter with you, Child?* The Boy surpriz'd, snatches up the Book hastily, and puts it in his Pocket.

[*His Mistress speaks to him again,*

Mist. Will, what's the matter, *Will?* tell me.

Will. Nothing. [*Offers to go away.*

Mist. Come, *Will*, do not be backward to tell me what troubles thee, for I have seen all you have been doing; what Book's that you had there?

Will. No Book of any harm.

Mist. Child, I do not think it is a Book of any harm, I believe it is a good Book; is it not the Bible, *Will?* Come, tell me.

Will. Yes, it is.

Mist Let me see it, *Will.*

Will. You may believe me, *it is the Bible*, I hope you'll not be angry.

Mist. Angry, Child, I am glad to see you looking in the Bible, I am not angry, I hope you are minding good things. [*So his Mistress sits down by him.*

Will. Oh, it's too late now! [*Here he falls a crying again, and cannot speak for a good while.*

Mist. Too late, *Will!* do not talk so.

Will. Yes! it's *too late, too late!* [*And cries vehemently.*

Mist. Child, if it be so; thy *too late* is much sooner than *my early* was: If it be too late for thee, what will become of any of us! [*The Mistress weeps too.*

Will.

Will. That is all one to me, it's *too late* for me.

Mist. Let me see thy Bible, Child; where hast thou been reading, that has put thee into this Condition?

Will. O, Every where! every where!

Mist. Show me the Book, *Will*, let me see it.

[*He shows her the Book, and abundance of Leaves turn'd down, but most of them at those Places which had discouraged the Child.*

Mist. What are all these Leaves turn'd down for; and who directed you to these terrible Texts of Scripture, Child? You have found all the dreadful Places, where God threatens hardned Sinners with his Displeasure, but *not one* of those Places which give Comfort to a returning Penitent.

[*She turns over to the Leaves the Child had folded down, which were such as these.*

Rom. 2. 5, 6. *After thy hardness and impenitent Heart treasurest up against thy self Wrath against the day of Wrath, and revelation of the righteous Judgments of God, who will render to every Man according to his Deeds.* Isaiah 6. 9. *Make the Heart of this People fat, and their Ears heavy, and shut their Eyes, lest they see with their Eyes, and hear with their Ears, and understand with their Hearts, and convert, and be healed:* And again the same repeated, *Mark.* 4. 12. *Rev.* 21. 8. *And all Liars shall have their part in the Lake which burneth with Fire and Brimstone.* Rev. 22. 11. *He that is unjust, let him be unjust still; and he that is filthy, let him be filthy still; behold I come quickly, and my Reward is with me.* 2 Thes. 1 8, 9 *In flaming Fire taking Vengeance on them that know not*

not God, &c. who shall be punished with everlasting Destruction from the Presence of the Lord. Psal. 9. 17. *The Wicked shall be turned into Hell, and all the Nations that forget God.* Psal. 50. 22. *Consider this ye that forget God, lest I tear you in pieces, and there be none to deliver.* Matth. 25. 41. *Depart from me ye Curs'd into everlasting Fire, prepared for the Devil and his Angels.* Heb. 12. 29. *For our God is a consuming Fire.* Isa. 33. 14. *Who amongst us shall dwell with everlasting Burnings.*

These, and abundance more such as these, the poor Boy had folded down, the reading of which had terrified him to such a Degree as above.

[*The Mistress having look'd them over, turns to the Boy.*

Mist. Child, what are all these Scriptures to thee?

Will. All *to me!* All *to me!* He told me, all that was said in the Book, was said to me.

Mist. HE told thee, *Will*, prethee who told thee?

Will. He that gave me the Book, my *Brother Tom*, over the Way, *he told me so*, and he is a very good Young man, and would not speak wrong, I am sure it is all said to me. [*Cries again.*

Mist. Well, *Will*, he is a very good Young-man, I am glad you have been talking with him, and he meant well, *no doubt*, but he is but a young Lad, a Boy, a Child like thy self, and you may be instructed farther about it, do not be cast down; was this it you cried about?

Will. Yes, yes, this was it; was not this enough?

Mist. Well, but you need not be so discourag'd, *Will*, let me shew you some other Texts.

Will.

Will. What, not to be lost for ever! and go to Hell! Not be discourag'd!

Mist. But are you willing to be better instructed, Child?

Will. What can instruct me; is not this the Word of God? and is it not plain! Am not I such a wicked One as is describ'd here? And is not all that is said here, true?

Mist. But, Child, you must take that part of the Scripture, which is a ground of Hope, and set it against these terrible Places; this is only an Artifice of the Devil, to terrifie you.

Will. What would he terrifie me for?

Mist. That you might despair of the Mercy of God, and not hope in Jesus Christ.

Will. What can I hope for, when these plain Things are said, shall belong to such as I am?

Mist. No, Child, I hope they are not threatned to such as thee; they are all to be understood of those that are Impenitent in their Sins, and go on hardned, without Repentance, to the last: I hope you will not be found among them; are you not sorry for your Sins?

Will. What does that signifie now, *if I am*?

Mist. A great deal; *even so much*, that it takes away the Edge of all those dreadful Scriptures that have frighted thee *so much*; and if that Sorrow for thy Sins be true and sincere, the Scripture is full of Encouragement for thee *to hope.*

Will. Ay, so he said, but he never told me a word of all those Places I have found, and I can't find the Promises he told me of, I can't find one of them!

Mist. That's for want of somebody to assist

thee,

thee, and open, and explain the Scriptures to thee; *poor Child!* thou hast had but little teaching.

Will. Little! I never had any teaching at all! I never had a Bible in my Life, never knew what it was till now; and I think it had been well I had not seen it now.

Mist. NO, NO, Will, do not say so; it is the best thing ever was given thee in the World, and I hope you shall thank God as long as you live, that you met with that honest Young man that gave it you; he is a godly, sober Young-man, and has shown thee what it is to be well Educated; he came of good Parents, and their Instruction is seen in his very Countenance; every body loves him, he is so sober, so religious, and talks so well of good Things; and it appears, I find, in his talk to thee, tho', being but a Youth, he might not be so able to prepare thee for the right understanding of the Scriptures when you were to read it, as others may.

Will. Why, he told me it was the Word of God, and that all that was written here, was true, and that it was all spoken to me, and I ought to understand it so, and bid me read it.

Mist. Well, and you have read some of it, but not all.

Will. Yes, I have read all the New Testament *over* and *over*; for I sat up three Nights last Week, and read all Night long, for I promised him I would read it.

Mist. Well, and have you not found encouraging Places, as well as those that terrified you in this manner?

Will. No, none at all!

Mist.

Miſt. How is that poſſible, if you have read it all over?

Will. I am ſure I have read it all over three times, from the firſt of *Matthew*, to the laſt of the *Revelations.*

Miſt. Then your Fears have ſo prevailed over your Hope, that your Eyes have been ſhut to your Comfort, and open only to your Diſcouragement; this is all from the Devil, *Will*, you muſt pray againſt it.

Will. So *Tom* ſaid; but I can't tell how to pray, I never pray'd in my Life but once.

Miſt. Once, *Child*, when was that?

Will. That Night he talk'd to me.

Miſt. VVhat did you pray for then, and how?

Will. I know not how, but I trembled, and cried out to God to pardon my Sins.

Miſt. Poor Child! what mov'd thee to it then?

Will. I felt ſome ſtrange Motion in my Heart, which I cannot deſcribe, that made my Tongue ſpeak I almoſt know not what, for I thought it a dreadful thing to ſpeak to God; and when I cried out *Lord pardon my Sins*, it ſet me a weeping, and a trembling.

Miſt. VVell, that was a bleſſed beginning; why did you not go on, Child? you ſhould have prayed again.

Will. My Heart did, but I could ſpeak no words.

Miſt. Alaſs, Child! that's the Prayer God delights in; *SO* may I pray all my Days! tho' I was never to ſpeak again!

Will. But *Brother Tom* told me I muſt ſpeak too.

Miſt. Yes, *Child*, you may ſpeak, and it is proper for your own ſake that you ſpeak words, both

both to expreſs your Meaning, and move your Affections; but unleſs your Heart joins, it is not Prayer; God hears no Words that the Heart joins not in; but he hears many a Sigh from the Heart, which cannot be expreſs'd in Words: As is plain from that Text, *Rom.* 8. 26. *The Spirit alſo helpeth our Infirmities, for we know not what to pray for as we ought, but the Spirit it ſelf maketh Interceſſion with groanings which cannot be uttered.* I hope it was the Spirit helped thy Heart to pray, when thou could'ſt utter no Words, *Child*, therefor do not be diſcouraged.

Will. I know nothing what it was, or what the Spirit means, unleſs that I have ſerved the *Evil Spirit* all my Days, and now I muſt have my Portion with the Devil and his Angels; this Book ſays ſo, look here elſe. [*Shows her the Place.* Matth. 25. 41.

Miſt. Child, You muſt not make Concluſions againſt your ſelf, any more than *for* your ſelf, from the Word of God, till you are taught to underſtand it aright.

Will. Why, do I not underſtand this Place right?

Miſt. No, you do not.

Will. How ſhall I underſtand it then?

Miſt. You muſt take the Scriptures as they explain themſelves; and you are bid to ſearch the Scripture, that is, to ſee how one Place is expounded by another; you ſhould always pray to God to open your Underſtanding, that you may underſtand the Scripture; and the want of this makes even thoſe very Parts of the Scripture which ſhould be our Comfort, be our Terror.

Will. Indeed the Young man told me ſo, but I did not do it.

Miſt.

Miſt. What did he bid you do?

Will. When he gave me the Book, I thank'd him, and promiſed him to read, but he ſaid, that was not all, I muſt pray to God to teach me to underſtand his Word, and to ſhow me my Duty, and to guide my Heart to do it, but I did not know that I ſhould always do this when I read the Bible.

Miſt. No doubt but you may pray very ſeaſonably for that at all times, and he was a good Child that taught thee to do ſo; but it muſt needs be more eſpecially ſeaſonable to pray ſo when you are going to read the Bible, that you may be inſtructed to reap Comfort from God's Word, and not Terror only, *as you have done.*

Will. What Comfort can I get from the Scripture, when it ſpeaks ſo dreadfully of my very caſe?

Miſt. Why there lies you Miſtake, *I ſay it is not your Caſe*, and therefore you may reap Comfort from the Scripture; *come, Child*, let us ſee and examine ſtrictly what your real Caſe is, it may be we may find reaſon *even from this very Book* to make you hope, that your Caſe is not included, or ſpoken to in any of theſe Texts; and if it ſhould appear ſo, would you not be very glad?

Will. Yes, *I ſhould be glad*; but I believe that's impoſſible.

Miſt. No, no, *Child*, it is not impoſſible, the firſt Part of your Caſe is this, That you have been a great Sinner.

Will. As ever was born in the World!

Miſt. Well, ſuppoſe ſo, *tho' that is not true neither*, for, poor Child, you have not ſinned againſt Light, and againſt Knowledge, and againſt

Con-

Conscience; for thou wast never taught to know God, or his Ways, or instructed in thy Duty; I am a worse Sinner than thou a great deal: But suppose all you say, suppose you are a great Sinner, yet you say you are sorry, and if you thought God would forgive you, would it not rejoice your Heart?

Will. Oh! if that were possible!

Mist. And are you as willing to go on wickedly as you were before?

Will. No, I abhor and abominate it.

[*He weeps here again.*

Mist. And would you serve and obey, and please God, if he will forgive you?

Will. Ay, with all my Heart; nay, whether he would forgive me or no, I would never be wicked again if I could help it; it is the abominable'st Life! I hate my self for it.

Mist. But if you were assur'd God would pardon you, what would you do?

Will. O! if that were possible!

Mist. Come, Child, look then into this blessed Book again; you are a Sinner, but you are not an impenitent Sinner; *you say, you* abhor and abominate your Sins, and hate your self for them; *you say,* you would not go on in Wickedness, nay, tho' God should not forgive what is past; *you say,* you would serve and please, and obey God with all your Heart: *If all this be true,* then I tell thee, Child, not one of these terrible Scriptures which have so discouraged thee, and so frighted thee, are spoken to thee, or meant of thee; no, not one of them.

Will.

Will. Why, my *Brother Tom* said all that was written in this Book, was said to me.

Mist. That is, *Child*, if thou art *SO* and *SO*, as these Scriptures describe, and if not, then they are spoken to give thee hope; otherwise the Scripture would contradict it self, *and not be true*, which is blasphemous to imagine.

Will. I do not understand how you mean.

Mist. Why, *Child*, *look here*, look upon the very Texts you have folded down, some of them explain themselves to be just as I say: *Rom.* 25. 6. *After thy hardness and impenitent Heart treasurest up Wrath*, &c. Now it is plain, thou art not hardned and impenitent, but God has given thee a penitent, repenting Heart, I hope it is a sincere one; *therefore* by the Words themselves, thou art not one of them that *treasure up Wrath against the day of Wrath*; so for that Scripture, *Isaiah* 9. 6. Why, *thine Eyes are not shut*, nor *thy Ear heavy*, nor *thy Heart fat*, that is rebellious, and contemning God; for that Text is plainly spoken of such whom God judicially hardens, and of no other; in like manner all the other Texts, every one of them, are Expressions signifying the Wrath and Vengeance of God against such as die in their Sins, or continue perverse, hardned, and impenitent.

Will. How shall I be sure that is so?

Mist. By comparing those Scriptures, *Child*, with such other Texts as explain their Meaning, are given to encourage our returning to God, and contain his Promises of Pardon to those who Repent.

Will. Where are they? I have read the whole Book, and cannot find them.

Mist. Look here, Child, 1 *John* 19. *If we confess our Sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our Sins, and to cleanse us from all Unrighteousness*: Here 'tis plain tho' you are a great Sinner, yet if *you confess*, he *will forgive you*; and you may observe, he does not say he is *gracious* and *merciful* to forgive; but *just* and *faithful*; implying, that having before in his Grace and Mercy given us his Promise of Forgiveness, it becomes, *humbly speaking*, a kind of Demand, and as he is just and faithful, therefore he must and will, nay, he cannot fail to make good those Promises to us.

Will. But where are those Promises then? I can find none of them in all the Bible.

Mist. O, the whole Scripture is full of them *Prov.* 28. 13 *He that covereth his Sins, shall not prosper; but WHOSO confesseth and forsaketh them, SHALL have Mercy.* Isaiah 55. 7. *Let the Wicked forsake his Way, and the unrighteous Man his Thoughts, and turn unto the Lord, and he WILL have Mercy, and to our God, for he WILL abundantly pardon.*

Will. That he told me of, but I can't find it.

Mist. Here it is, Child, in the Prophecy of *Isaiah.*

Will. Is that the Word of God too?

Mist. Yes, and that Prophet is counted the most excellent of all the Prophets for these things and is therefore called the Evangelical Prophet.

Will. But there are more in other Places, are there not?

Mist

Miſt. Yes, Child, eſpecially in thoſe Scriptures
at ſpeak of Chriſt, in whom we are all to be
ved.

Will. Let me hear them; for I do not under-
and this being redeemed by Chriſt's Death at
l, tho' *Tom* ſaid ſomething of that to me.

Miſt. You underſtand that you have been a
icked Boy, a great Sinner, and was born in
n, your Father was a Sinner before you.

Will. Yes, I underſtand that too well.

Miſt. Well, Jeſus Chriſt, who is the Son of
od, came into the World to Save ſuch as you,
d none but ſuch, and he Died to bring this to
ſs; this you muſt believe.

Will. Does the Scripture ſay this?

Miſt. Yes, look here, *Rom.* 5. 6. *For when we
ere yet without Strength, in due time Chriſt died
r the ungodly.* 1 Pet. 3. 18. *For Chriſt alſo hath
ce ſuffered for Sins, the juſt for the unjuſt, that
e might bring us to God.* Acts 5. 31. *Him hath
od exalted with his Right-hand to be a Prince and
Saviour, for to give Repentance and Remiſſion.*
Tim. 1. 15. *This is a faithful Saying, and wor-
y of all acceptation, that Jeſus Chriſt came into
e World to ſave Sinners.* Matth. 9. 13. *I am not
me to call the Righteous, but Sinners to Repen-
nce:* Are not theſe things plain, *Child.*

Will. But I am afraid!

Miſt. Of what, Child?

Will. That it is not for me, I am not one of
hem; elſe why was I not taught to know this
efore?

Miſt. Here is a Text for that too, *Child,*
Mark 5. 36. *Be not afraid, only believe.*

Will. What must I believe? And what if I do believe?

Mist. The Scripture is plain, that we shall be Saved by Faith in him, notwithstanding all the terrible Scriptures you have found out. *Matt.* 1. 21. *His Name is Jesus, for he shall save his People from their Sins.* Acts 13. 39 *By him all that believe, are justified.* Rom. 20. 31. *These things are written that ye might believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God, and that believing, ye might have Life through his Name.* John 5. 24 *He that heareth my Word, and believeth on him that sent me, has everlasting Life, and shall not enter into Condemnation.* Rom. 8. 1. *There is therefore now no Condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus.* Fold all these Texts down, Child, and remember to read them over when thou art tempted to be doubting of God's Mercy in Christ.

Will. But will Christ receive me now?

Mist. Yes, yes, He has made a gracious Promise to thee himself for that, *John 6. 37. HIM that cometh to me, I will in no wise cast out.*

[*The Boy starts at those Words.*

Mist. What dost start at, Child?

Will. That's the blessed Place that my dear Teacher told me of, and that work'd *ALL*; and now I can't find it.

Mist. Work'd all what, Child?

Will. That was the Text that made my Heart melt, and tremble, and made me *pray to God*; and I have read over the whole Book, and can't find it, tho' I made him turn down a Leaf at it sure it is not in the Book.

Mist

Miſt. Not in the Book! God forbid; why here is, Child, look at it, read it, and God give thee comfort of it.

[*The Boy reads, and Tears fall from his Eyes for Joy, as before for Sorrow.*

Will. Ay, here it is! here it is! I will come to him! I will pray to him!

[*He kiſſes the Book with great Affection, and receives Comfort from it.*

The End of the ſecond Dialogue.

Notes *on the ſecond Dialogue.*

THE Impreſſions of the ſerious Diſcourſe mention'd in the firſt Dialogue that this Young Man had with his Comrade, were ſo great, that they could not be concealed.

Note, A Change wrought in the Heart, will infallibly ſhew it ſelf in the Converſation.

The Maſter and Miſtreſs being good People themſelves, receiv'd Impreſſions of the Alteration in the Boy, ſuitable to the Nature of the thing, but the reſt of the Servants dreamt nothing of it.

Note, The Symptoms of Converſion are eaſily diſcovered by thoſe who know the working of the Spirit of God, while they are perfectly inviſible to others.

By the Agony the Boy was in at the reading the Comminations of the Scripture againſt Sin,

without the promisory Part, may be observ'd.

That meer Convictions of Sin drive to Despair, but neither direct to, nor enquire after a Remedy.

The Child had promised his Comrade, the young Instructor aforesaid, to read over the Bible which he gave him, and he did read it diligently; for three Nights in one Week he had sitten up, altho' he work'd hard all Day; but as the Discourse of his little Teacher was wholly upon the encouraging Promises of God, the Boy thought to find all the Scripture so, and was dreadfully surpriz'd when he found so many terrifying Scriptures which he knew nothing of: On the other hand, tho' he read over, no doubt, the most comforting Promises of the Scripture, yet having his Fears only to interpret to him the the first, and no Assistant to guide him to the last, he discerned them not as he read, and verily believed they were not there.

Note, Comforting Scriptures generally want explaining; terrifying Scriptures explain themselves.

Here may be worth observing,

1. The Benefit of religious Conversation, even among young Children, and the great Duty of making our Society instructing to one another
2. The Advantage of placing Children in religious Families.

If this poor Child had not fallen in such a Family as this, the Temptation he was under to despair, might in all Probability have prevail'd over him, and either have led him to give over his Enquiry after religious Matters, or, if God had not restrain'd him, have driven him to Extremities

tremities, such as Destraction, and perhaps, self-destruction, as is often the Consequences in like Cases; for, *a wounded Spirit who can bear.*

Observe the poor Child's Fear of its being too late for him to find Mercy, or be accepted.

If it might be too late for him, what have they to fear who run on to grey Hairs in an impenitent State! Well might his Mistress observe, that *his too late* was sooner than *her early*, and so it is with many.

From the good Woman's applying the Scriptures to him for Comfort, Observe how the Scriptures are to be read.

1. With serious seeking God for the Assistance of his Spirit to open our Understandings, that we may understand the Scriptures; for without his Teaching, all our Reading will be in vain.
2. With a due comparing one Text with another, that the Scriptures being their own just Expositor, may reconcile the Truths of God to our Sence, as they ought to be understood.
3. For want of this, we rob our selves of the Comfort of the Scriptures; pass over those things prepared to heal and restore the Soul, and fill our Hearts with distracting Doubts about our own State, which are always harder to be resolved and removed, by how much they seem confirmed by the mistaken Authority of the Scripture

Observe, The good Woman finding the Boy had receiv'd Comfort from that blessed Promise of our Lord, and that he was affectionately ex-

preſſing his Reſolution to caſt himſelf at the Feet of Chriſt, crying out, *I will* come to him, *I will* pray to him; and in a kind of a Rapture kiſſing the Book, and the Words ſhe had ſhewed him, ſhe wiſely withdrew, as believing it was a happy Juncture, in which the Child ought to be left alone, that he might give himſelf full Vent, with Fervency and Earneſtneſs to call upon God, which he did, as will appear afterwards; and tho' this cauſes the Dialogue to break off ſooner, and more abruptly than it might have done, yet it is conceived, as much is here ſet down as may anſwer the Deſign of it, (*viz.*) The Inſtruction of others.

Ending theſe Notes with this Obſervation for the Reader's Information, That as far as this Account is really Hiſtorical, and points at any particular Family, this Boy, or young Man, came to be eminent for Piety, and a religious Life, in the Place where he liv'd; and being ſettled in that Country, was a very uſeful Inſtrument in the propagating Chriſtian Knowledge, and ſupporting the Intereſt of true Religion in all the Country round him, and perhaps is living ſtill.

The Third

DIALOGUE.

THE young Lad who had been so happily instrumental in the Conviction and Conversion of his Comrade, had thereby render'd himself so agreeable to the good People, who, as I said before, was Master and Mistress of the other Lad, that they could not but be very willing to converse a little with him themselves; and to that End caused their Apprentice, who called him *Brother*, to bring him to their House, where, in time, he became very Intimate, and where they were much pleased and diverted with his pretty Discourses, which were always about Religion, and serious things.

Among the rest of his Discourse, he never forgot to bemoan himself for his Father's having placed him in a Family of no religious Orders, without the Worship of God in it, and where he had neither publick Opportunity to serve God, or private Retirement for the discharge of his own Duty.

The good People encouraged him to bear it, and seriously advised him not to let the sence of his

his own Duty to wear off, or allow himself in the Omission of private Prayer to God, whatever Obstructions he met with for want of Retirement and Opportunity, and invited him to come over to their House as often as he could at their Hours of Family-Worship, and join with them.

This he not only gladly accepted, but constantly attended, and did it so avowedly, not regarding how it might interfere with his Master's Hours, and his own Conveniencies, that his Master took offence at his being so often out of the way, and not knowing the least of what occasioned his Absence, complain'd to his Father of it, as if it had been some wicked Course he had followed, telling him, *that* his Son did not behave himself orderly; *that* he was out of his Business unseasonably; *that* he must have some bad Haunts, for that he generally went out every Morning very early, (being then Winter) long before Day; and in the Evenings was absent often at Supper; *that* on the Lord's Day Evening he was never to be found, *and the like*, and therefore desired his Father to take some Care about him, for that if he went on, he would be ruin'd: He farther acquainted his Father, that the Boy had appear'd very melancholly, and discontented; that he had ask'd him often if any thing ail'd him, or that he was not well, and he always answer'd, *Yes*; that he had ask'd him if he did not like his Business, and still he answer'd, *Yes, very well*, so that he knew not what ail'd him, and desir'd his Father to talk with him, for if he carried it thus, he could not bear it, but must send him Home again.

The Father, who knew his Son to be a sober, religious

religious Child, and partly knew the Reason of his Discontent, was not at all surpriz'd at that part of his Master's Complaint which related to his appearing melancholly, and dissatisfied; but the other part of his Discourse allarm'd him a little, about being out of the House at unseasonable Hours, and giving no Account of himself, and therefore readily promised to talk with his Son, and examine him about it, that his Conduct might be rectified.

Accordingly he finds an Opportunity to talk with the Lad, and lets him know all his Master had laid to his Charge, desiring him to tell him the Truth of the whole Matter: The Boy, not at all surpriz'd, told his Father the whole Case very honestly; *how that* his Master had no such thing as Family-worship in his House, but that they liv'd all like Heathens there, pursuing *the World*, as if it was their Heaven, without the least regard of their Duty to God, or any thing that was religious: "And you, Sir, *says the* "*Boy to his Father*, having always instructed "me in other things, and taught me to live af- "ter another Manner, it was very uneasie to me, "as I have formerly hinted to you; but I have "of late made my self a little easie, by getting "an Acquaintance in Mr. -----'s Family, an "honest Clothier, who lives over against our "House, who are very good People, and who "constantly go to Prayers every Morning at six "a Clock, and every Evening about Eight or "Nine, and I get up every Morning to go over "there to Prayers with their Family; and every "Lord's Day I go thither in the Evening, where

the

" the good Man reads to his Family, and exa-
" mines his Children and Servants, and then
" prays with them; while, at our House, all the
" Evening is spent in Feasting, and Visiting, or
" idle Discourse, not at all to the Business of
" the Day: And this is the whole Case.

When the Lad had ended his Discourse, and the Father was assur'd of the Truth of it, he took his Son in his Arms, and kissed and embraced him very affectionately, and said,

" The Blessing of God and thy Father be upon
" thee, *my Dear*, that has made so good a Use
" of so unhappy an Omission of mine: It was
" my Sin, *my Dear*, and an inexcusable Error
" in me, to put thee out in a Family where the
" Name of God is not call'd upon, and the Wor-
" ship of God not regarded; by which I run
" the Venture of thy Soul's Good, and of ha-
" ving all the Pains I had taken in teaching and
" instructing thee in the Ways of God, and in
" the Knowledge of Religion, *lost* and *abused*;
" and had it been so, thy Ruin had been at my
" Door, having regarded the Trade, and the Pro-
" spect of Worldly Advantage only in placing
" thee out, not the good of thy Soul; but since
" God has given thee Grace to prevent the Evil,
" which might through my Neglect have befallen
" thee, *the Praise be to his Mercy*, I am fully sa-
" tisfied in what you have done; and if your
" Master speaks of it to you, as I suppose he
" will, I would have you tell him the whole
" Truth, and if he dislikes you for it, *offer to go*
" *back to your Father*; and if he consents, I shall
" as gladly take you from him, as I received you
" from God, when you was born. The

The Child encouraged by his Father thus to deal plainly with his Master, and being a Lad very ready of Speech, tho' modest withal in his Behaviour, resolves, the first Occasion his Master gave him, to do it effectually; which his Master not failing to do the same Evening, produc'd the following Discourse between them.

The Youth, it seems, had been over at the good People's House, as usual, during their Family-Worship, and coming in about nine a Clock at Night, his Master begins with him thus:

Master. THomas, where are you?
Tho. Here, Sir.
Ma. Have you been Abroad to Night?
Tho. A little, Sir.
Ma. How long have you been out?
Tho. Not above half an Hour, Sir, at most.
Ma. Where have you been?
Tho. I have been no farther than at Mr. ·····'s over the Way.
Ma. Well, but *Thomas*, I must talk with you a little; I have observ'd it, and others have observ'd it here in the House, that your Conduct is alter'd very much from what it us'd to be, and you seem dull and melancholly, I must know what is the matter with you: If you do not like your Business, tell me honestly, *Thomas*, tho' you are Bound, I will not keep you against your Will; I have a respect for you, and for your Father, and I won't force your Inclination; if you are willing to go, *Thomas*, you shall; and therefore I would have you speak plainly, what is it you dislike the Trade for?

Tho.

Tho. No, Sir, I do not dislike the Trade at all; but if you please to let me go, I shall be very - - - - [*Here his Master interrupts him.*

Ma. Well, *Thomas*, but I am willing to know what the Reason is, too; what do you dislike? do you dislike your Master?

Tho. No, Sir, not in the least, I assure you, I have no reason for it.

Ma. What then? Has any body in the House ill us'd you?

Tho. No indeed, Sir.

Ma. What then?

Tho. Nothing; but if you think fit to let me - -

Ma. No, Thomas, never without a Reason for it; that would be to have some other Reasons given afterwards for it, which are not *the true Reasons.*

Tho. If you think so, Sir, I am very willing to stay, and do my Business.

Ma. Well, Thomas, but whether you go or stay, I must know the Cause of your Discontent.

Tho. I'll be better contented, Sir, than I have been, if I can, rather than displease you.

Ma. No, Thomas, that won't satisfie me neither, for I have some Discontents as well as you, *Thomas*, and if you stay with me, you must remove my Discontents, as well as your own.

Tho. I shall be very willing to remove any Discontents you have, *Sir*, if I can; I hope I do not neglect your Business, Sir.

Ma. I do not say my Business is neglected, but you take a Liberty to go out, and stay out so very often, as makes me uneasie, ; I must be a little satisfied, *Thomas*, about that. *Tho.*

Tho. Sir, you were pleased to tell us, when I was first Bound, that if we were in the Warehouse at such and such Times, when your Business required, you cared not whither we went at other Times; and I never have fail'd your Business, Sir, nor your Hours.

Ma. But you are out at unseasonable Hours, *Thomas*, and that is not of good Reputation to your self.

Tho. I thought, *Sir*, you did not regard that, when you left us so entirely to our selves; if it is offensive to you, I will refrain it, tho' I should be very sorry to be restrain'd.

Ma. But I must know the Occasion of it, as well as of your apparent Dissatisfaction also, *Thomas*; sure you may be free with me, come, let me know the Truth.

Tho. You will, perhaps, be displeas'd with me, *Sir*, if I should tell you the Truth, or think I do not.

Ma. If that Truth be justifiable, why should I be displeased; if not, why should I not be displeased?

Tho. There may be Reasons for your Displeasure, tho' the thing be justifiable.

Ma. Let the thing then appear to be justifiable *first*, and if I am unreasonable, we shall talk of that afterwards: If you can justifie the thing it self, why should you be backward to let me know it.'

Tho. Sir, As you are my Master, and I am your Servant, I was bound to give you an Account of my Time; but the Liberty you gave all your Servants to go where they pleas'd, provided they were at Home at such and such Times, has sufficiently,

ciently, *as I conceived*, justified my being Abroad, even without giving an Account.

Ma. But I did not take from my self the Liberty of enquiring whither you went, or of altering that License I had given, if I saw it abused; and since you have taken the Liberty, and refuse to give me a reasonable Account of it, I now recall it, and expect you to be found always at Home, unless I give you leave.

Tho. As I took only the Liberty you gave, Sir, I shall exactly obey you in the Restraint, however hard I may think it.

Ma. But there are some other Reasons why I ought to insist upon knowing where you have been, and how you have spent your Time at the Hours you have been missing; and I think it concerns your Reputation to have me satisfied.

Tho. Whether it concerns my Character or no, *Sir*, if you command it, I think it my Duty to obey you, I avoided it only, that you might not be displeased with me.

Ma. Since you chuse to obey it as my Command, rather than comply with it as my Request, you must be gratified then by telling you, I do demand an Account of it.

Tho. Sir, all the Time I have spent out of your House, or out of your Business, except only the Times I have ask'd you leave to see my Father, has been over the Way, at Mr.----'s the Clothier.

Ma. What, is it there you have been gone in the Morning before Day?

Tho. Yes, Sir.

Ma. What can the Meaning of that be? sure you have some earnest Business there; and I suppose

pose it must be something he or his Wife was not to know, that requir'd you to be there with his Servants, every Day before their Master and Mistress was up.

Tho. I have told you nothing, Sir, but the Truth.

Ma. Well, I shall enquire nothing of your Business, I know my Neighbour ....s is a good Man, and it is his Business to look after his Servants, I shall give him Notice to do so; in the mean time I shall acquaint your Father of your Practice, and let him enquire after it, it is no Business of mine; I don't trouble my self with what Courses you take, but while you are with me, I expect you break it off, and attend your Business.

Tho. I must obey you, *Sir*, tho' I think it hard if you will not dismiss me your Business, it must be as it pleases God.

The Master goes out and leaves him; the Boy's Father being impatient to know what would pass in the Conference, was come to the House, tho' late; the Master finds him waiting for him, and begins warmly

Ma. How do you, *Sir*; I doubt I have no very good News to tell you.

Fa. About what, Sir?

Ma. About your Son; he and I have had a little Brush this Evening.

Fa. I am sorry for that, I hope he does not misbehave himself, or neglect his Business.

Ma. I can't say much for that; but, as I told you formerly, he has gotten some ill Haunts among the Neighbours Servants, and he is out with them every Night and Morning; nay, in

the Morning before Day, and every Sabbath day after Sermon, I see nothing of him at least for that Night; and I can get nothing out of him, but if I talk a little to him, he is for going away, and coming back to you again.

Fa. What can his Business be, to go out before Day!

Ma. Nay, I have nothing to do with that, take him to Task about it your self, it is your Business, *he is your Son. he is none of mine*; you said you would talk with him before.

Fa. But, Sir, tho' he be my Son, yet he is your Servant; tho' I did talk a little with him, yet I said the less, because I cannot be of your Opinion, that you have nothing to do with it; is he not entirely under your Government?

Ma. Ay, as to Business, I have the Government of him, indeed, and I am to teach him his Trade, and to see that he does my Business, and so I will while he stays with me; what can I do farther?

Fa. But Sir, as I put him Apprentice to you, I committed him to your Government entirely, Soul and Body; I hope you have some little Concern for your Servants, besides just their doing your Business.

Ma. Why, what can I do more than restrain them, if I see them take bad Courses? And I have done so to yours, I have forbid him going there any more.

Fa. It is not for me to teach you, *Sir*, what to do; but if you will bear with me....

Ma. Ay, very freely, very freely; you know I have Respect enough for you, to hear any thing you will say to me; nay, and for your Son too;

I'd

I'd do any thing I can, I should be very sorry to have the Boy ruin'd; he is a promising Young Man enough.

Fa. Why, as to that, *Sir*, in particular, I will speak afterward, but I am first upon the general, you seem to go upon this Point, That you think your self not oblig'd to take any farther Concern upon you about your Servants, than just to restrain them, if you see them take ill Courses, or to acquaint their Friends with it; and that your main Care is, to see that your Business is done: *If I take you right*, this is what you said.

Ma. It is so; *why*, what can I do more?

Fa. A great deal, Sir; And I think a great deal more is your Duty, as a Master.

Ma. What more can be expected of me?

Fa. Really, *Sir*, If you will pardon me, I think you have the whole Duty and Authority of a Parent devolv'd upon you, for the Time, and as you make your Apprentices a part of your Family, all the Duty you owe the rest of your Family, you owe to them, both as to their Souls and Bodies, except such as relate to Estate, which is peculiar to Children; I need not tell you your Duty, but I'll tell you what I understood by putting my Child into your Hands, if you please.

Ma. Well, What's that?

Fa. Why, I understood that I put him entirely under your Government, *in the first Place*, and under your Care; *In the second*, that this Government respected the Authority of your Command, which was to be a perfect *Supersedeas* to mine, even so much, that if I had commanded him one thing, and you another, that interfer'd with it, his obey-

ing you was not to be counted a disobeying me: *For Example*, If I commanded him to meet me at any Place or Time, were the Occasion ever so great; if you commanded him to stay at home, he ought to neglect my Command, and obey yours, which contradicted it, *his Time* being yours, and not mine; and this I always told him, and therefore charg'd him never to come to me without asking you leave.

Ma. This is all very just, and I believe he has always done so.

Fa. Then, Sir, as I put him entirely under your Government, suspending my own Authority over him *as a Father*, it becomes a necessary Consequence of it, that I entirely committed him to your Care, both Soul and Body; how could this be otherwise? Since as I reserv'd no Power to command him, so I had of course remov'd him from my Inspections.

Ma. Well, and do I not discharge this Duty, by acquainting you of his ill Courses?

Fa. No, *not at all, Sir*, for I may indeed take upon me to caution and advise him, and shew my dislike of his Conduct; but the Power and Authority of warning him, instructing him, reproving him, restraining him, and, if need be, of correcting him, *is all yours.*

Ma. Those things are out of Doors long ago; *prethee do you think* I'll trouble my self with my Apprentices at that rate? *No, no*, not I; I never struck a Servant in my Life, and if I should, who do you think would stay with me? Apprentices *now a days* are not like what they were when you and I were Apprentices; now we get a hundred

hundred Pound, or two or three hundred Pound a piece with them; they are too high for Reproof and Correction.

Fa. I know not what Custom may have done, Sir, to alter the Practises of Masters, and their Apprentices; but I am sure the Rule is not alter'd, *the Duty* of a Master to Servants, and of Servants to their Masters, *is still the same.*

Ma. We don't trouble our Heads with those things *now.*

Fa. I am sorry for it, you know best, how then you can answer to God for the Souls committed to your Charge; do you think every religious Parent, when he puts his Child Apprentice to you, does not reckon that he commits his Soul to your Care, as well as his Body?

Ma. I do not say but, in the Nature of the thing *it should be so,* but as *I told you,* we do not understand it so *now a-days.*

Fa. I assure you I understood it so, when I put my Son Apprentice to you, and I hope you will understand it so too, or else you will neither act like a Friend, or like a Christian.

Ma. Why, do I not act like *both* now, in giving you an Account of this piece of your Son's Behaviour, that you may enquire into it?

Fa. I allow your giving me an Account of it, and thereby an Opportunity to join my Enquiry and Assistance with you to reform any thing amiss, *is Friendly,* but we are upon another Point now, *which is this,* That you think, by this you discharge your Part, that the Duty lies upon me now, and you have no more to do; and this I can by no means allow.

Ma.

Ma. Why, what would you make of me? must I be a Father and Master too?

Fa. No question of it; he is under your Family Care, *as to his Body, he is your Servant*, but as to his Soul, *I think*, he is as much your Son as any Child you have; and I cannot acquit you of the Obligation and Duty of a Parent to your Servants, do you discharge your Conscience of it how you please.

Ma. Why, what would you have me Catechise and Instruct my Apprentices, as if they were my Children? Then I must turn Schoolmaster; I hope you have done that already, and I think it ought to be supposed, all Parents have done that before they put their Children Apprentices, they do not put them Aprentices to learn Religion, but to learn their Trades.

Fa. Sir, it is true they do not put their Children Apprentices to learn Religion, neither do they put them Apprentices *to lose their Religion*, and to have all the Pains their Parents have taken with them, sunk again: There is a kind of Instruction subsequent to Catechisms, and Examinations; *there are kinds* of Instructions suited to the Age, and Circumstances; and such an Instructor every Master of a Family ought to be, to his Servants, as well as his Children.

Ma. I do not understand what Instruction you mean.

Fa. Why, suppose your own Children were grown up, past saying their Catechise, would you think your Duty of instructing them ceased? Is there nothing for a Parent to say to Young Men and Young Women, after he has done with Questions and Answers? *Ma.*

Ma. That may be, as he sees Occasion, if they take ill Courses.

Fa. Why, is there no previous Advice to be given; no Cautions to avoid Company; no Exhortations to preserve Vertue, and to behave soberly and modestly? No pressing them to their Duty to God, and to avoid those Sins that will ruin their Souls? Is not this a Duty upon us all to our Children?

Ma. Yes; but would you have me do this to Apprentices too?

Fa. Most certainly; especially when you take Apprentices that you know were religiously educated, and *on whom* such things are likely to make due Impressions; and I must own, if you do not, you do not, I think, discharge the Duty of a Master; for a Master is a *PARENT*, tho' he is not a *Father*.

Ma. You have no Scripture for this in the whole Bible.

Fa. Suppose that were true, the Nature of the thing is so plain, that there needed no particular Scripture to command it in express Terms; and yet you will find Scripture enough for it too, in the Examples of good Men; particularly in *Joshua*, who resolv'd to serve the Lord, *he*, and *his House*: And how could that be, if he did not instruct, or command his Servants to do so? *David says*, a Lyar shall not dwell with him: What is more plain, than that he resolved to correct the irreligious Behaviour of his whole Houshold, as well Servants as Children, and to turn away those who were incorrigible? But the Fourth Command ment puts this Matter out of question, which

is

is expreſs in the caſe of the keeping the Sabbath; mark the Words, *In it thou ſhalt do manner of Work*; *THOU*, there's the Maſter's Duty for himſelf: The next part, is his Duty in ſeeing that his Family do perform it as well as himſelf; *NOR thy Son*, *NOR thy Daughter*; there's his Duty as a Father; *NOR thy Man Servant*, *NOR thy Maid Servant*; there's his hired Servants; *NOR the Stranger that is within thy Gates*; there are is Apprentices: And what's the meaning of this word *NOR*, but this, Thou ſhalt do no manner of Work, *NOR* permit or ſuffer thy Son or thy Daughter, or thy Servants to do any.

This Commandment expreſly declares, that the Servants are ſubjected to the Maſter's Command, in matters relating to their Duty to God, and that Maſters are oblig'd to ſee that their Servants perform it.

Ma. Indeed you have ſaid ſomething in this that is new to my Thoughts, and does ſeem to give an Authority to what you ſay; I confeſs, I never conſider'd that part of it before; but what can I do? If I ſhould go about this Work with my Servants, as well Apprentices as Journeymen, they would laugh at me, it would make me ridiculous.

Fa. If you are to be laugh't out of your Duty by your Servants, I am ſorry for it, you are very ill qualified to be a Maſter; I hope, and am perſwaded, my Son would not be one of them.

Ma. I know not whether he would or no, I find him not the moſt complying, particularly in my Enquiry about this Matter which I now tell you of; it was a long time before he would

own

own where he ſpent his Time, and now he has told me, I have no Account in what he has ſpent his Time, or what his Buſineſs was there, and at thoſe unſeaſonable Hours too.

Fa. Why, this is the very thing I complain of.

Ma. Why, *how ſhall I help it?* what would you have me do?

Fa. Do! I would have you act the Maſter, and oblige him to do as becomes a Servant, *viz.* give you an exact Account of his Behaviour, his Time is yours, and you ought to know how he ſpends it; if any of his Time is employ'd out of your Buſineſs, you ought to exact an Account of it from him, how it has been diſpoſed of, as much as you would of Money that you had truſted him with, how he had paid it.

Ma. I thought this more your Work than mine.

Fa. If he was your own Son, and my Apprentice, I ſhould think ſo too; *but as it is,* as I ſaid before, his Time is not mine, nor his own, but yours, and 'tis to you he ought to give an Account of it.

Ma. But, pray, why do you put it off from your ſelf? you know I have a great hurry of Buſineſs, and cannot have time, and he will be more in Awe of you, than of me; I think it is much better for you.

Fa. I am very far from putting it off from my ſelf, I ſhall concur with you moſt readily in the ſtricteſt Examination into his Behaviour; but I am ſurpriz'd to hear you put it off from your ſelf, as if you were not concern'd in it, and by which, if his Courſes are evil, as you ſuggeſt he may be ruined at any time, and I may know

nothing of it; and you must allow that this ought to give me some Concern as a Father, whatever it does to you as a Master.

Ma. I am something of your Mind as its being my Duty to my Servants, tho' as I am circumstanc'd, I do not see how I can perform it.

Fa. If God gives you a Sence of its being your Duty, I leave the Sence of your living in the Neglect of it, to his Mercy, who, I hope will open your Eyes to the Necessity of performing it; it is a sad thing to be in such a Circumstance as renders what is your known Duty impracticable to you.

Ma. What can I do?

Fa. That is for you to consider, not me; if you are convinc'd of what you ought to do, have spent my Time well enough.

Ma. But, what would you have me do with your Son?

Fa. Do! act the Master with him, and command him to give you an exact Account of where he has spent the Time you charge him with, in what Company, and about what Business.

Ma. If I do, he will refuse it, and desire me to dismiss him, he does as good as do that already which I took ill from him.

Fa. What must be the Occasion of that?

Ma. Why, it had been observ'd by all the House as well as by me, that he has been melancholly and discontented a great while, and I very kindly ask'd him the reason, but he declined to tell me; I asked him if he dislik'd the Trade, he said *NO*; if he dislik'd his Master, *NO*; I told him, if he was uneasie at any thing, tho' he was

Bound

Bound, I would releaſe him, for I would not keep him againſt his Inclination; at this he ſeem'd pleaſed, and mighty deſirous to go; now what can I do? If I challenge him with his going out, and pretend to demand a ſtrict Account of him, and he refuſes, what can I do, but threaten to turn him away? and that, it ſeems, he deſires, and yet he will not tell me the reaſon of it neither, which does not ſhew him to have much good Nature, or good Manners: Indeed I took it ſo ill, that, but in reſpect to you, I had ſent him Home that very Minute; and now I have told you of it, what would you have me do?

Fa. I have ſaid what I would have you do, *viz.* ask the Maſter with him, and tell him in plain Terms, you will have an Account of his Behaviour, you may be ſure he ſhall get nothing by complaining to me, if his Caſe be bad; and if he refuſes poſitively, as I believe he will not, we will enquire of you Neighbour, Mr. ...s, for he has the Character of a very good Man, perhaps he may find it out for us.

Ma. I know he is a very pious, religious, good Man, and his Wife is a very religious Woman, and 'tis, indeed, a very ſober Family, which makes me wonder what the Boy can be doing here, which he ſhould be ſo earneſt to conceal; if you will, I'll go and enquire of him *firſt*.

Fa. No, I think you had better talk with the Boy *firſt*; I am perſwaded he will ſubmit to you, and, I hope, tell you the Truth; and if that Truth be to your Satisfaction, you will be better pleaſed to have it from the Boy, than to make it more publick.

Ma. Well, I will have another Dialogue with him to Morrow, and you shall hear what will be the Issue. [*The Father goes away, and the Youth coming to the Door with him, the Father says thus:*

Fa. Thomas, It seems your Master has been talking with you about this Matter.

Son. Yes, Sir,

Fa. He is very angry, and takes it very ill you should refuse to give him an Account of your self and where you used to be when you go out in the Morning and Evening.

Son. I did tell him where I was, and assured him I was no where else.

Fa. But it was a long time before you would tell him that.

Son. I was so afraid he would enquire what my Business was there, that I could not think of telling him.

Fa. Why, you must tell him still, *Child*, for he is mighty earnest to know what you are there so much for; he imagines it is some wicked thing by your being afraid to tell him, I hope the Account you gave me of it, is true.

Son. Dear Father, I hope you do not doubt its being true, I never used to tell you an Untruth.

Fa. No, Child, I do not doubt of its being true; and why then should you be afraid to tell him of it?

Son. I am more asham'd than afraid to tell him of it; I think it does not become me to make my Master blush at himself.

Fa. But here is a Necessity now, so that I do not

ot see how you can avoid it, let him take it how e will; for it passes in the Family that you have ome ill Correspondence, or some bad Company here, and they will make a great deal of it, if ou are so backward to give an Account of it, nd therefore to clear up your own Reputation, ou must tell your Master.

Son. I had rather you would do it for me, Sir; am not fit to talk to my Master about such things.

Fa. I have prepar'd the Way, by a long Dis- ute with your Master, about his Duty to his ervants; and I am perswaded let what you say e never so course, or Boyish, God will bless it , as to carry Conviction along with it, that e has not done his Duty to you, whatever you ave done to him.

Son. I can say nothing to him of that, *Sir*, he ill fly out in a Rage at me.

Fa. No, no, you are only to answer his Que- tions, and give an Account of your self, and of he Reason why you go over to the Clothier's louse every Morning and Evening, you can do hat easily enough, let the Will of God be done what shall follow one Way or other.

Son. I will do as you order me *Sir*, as well as can. [*The Father leaves him, and the Boy going in, his Master calls him.*

Ma. Thomas, come hither.

Tho. Ye s, Sir.

Ma. Well, I have given your Father an Account f your Behaviour, and he is very much concern'd, s well as I, about it.

Tho. I am sorry for it, Sir.

Ma. Well, but that is not enough, your Father

and I too, are resolv'd to find out the Bottom of it, if you will not confess ingenuously.

Tho. Sir, you speak of it, as if I was guilty of some strange thing; I hope I have committed no Crime, Sir.

Ma. It will be very well, if it appears so, Sir: however, our Suspicions are justified by your being so very careful to conceal your self; and if this has made me resolve to examine into it, you might save me that Labour, *as I told you*, by an ingenuous Confession.

Tho. I never declin'd it, *Sir*.

Ma. No! Did I not press you to it before, and you declin'd it, and your Father's coming prevented, or else, I suppose, I had had a flat Denial?

Tho. I never denied to obey any of your Commands, *Sir*, in my Life; I only told you that I was backward, because I fear'd it might displease you, but I little thought it should be suggested that my being Abroad was for any thing criminal.

Ma. How could you expect any other?

Tho. Because, being perfectly innocent, I had no thought of being suspected.

Ma. Clear up all then, *Thomas*, by ingenuously giving an Account of your self to me now.

Tho. Be pleased, Sir, to tell me as to what of my Behaviour you mean, whether as to my being abroad, or my being discontented; for you charge me with both.

Ma. Begin *first* with your being abroad; *you say*, you were only at my Neighbour's, over the Way, I have not examin'd into it yet, but I take it for granted that you speak Truth.

The

Tho. Indeed, *Sir*, I was no where but there.

Ma. Well, your Business there; the Occasion of your going so early; how you employ'd your self there, and with who? *These are the Questions.*

Tho. You will not take it ill, *Sir*, I hope then, if my Answers may seem not to become me, or less dutiful or respectful to you, than you may think they ought to be.

Ma. Not at all, so you speak Truth, *Thomas.*

Tho. I hope I shall satisfie you of that, Sir, by the Consequence: *You know, Sir*, I have been brought up under my Father, with a religious Education, and in his Family, where the Worship of God has been constantly kept up, and coming hither, *Sir*, as an Apprentice, where I found you were not pleas'd to permit me, or to let me come up when you, *I doubt not*, went to Prayers, or reading with your Family; it made me afraid either that you did not think me worthy to be reckon'd one of your Family, or that it was a Judgment of God upon me, to be shut out from his Worship; this, Sir, made me very sad, which is the Discontent you speak of; but hearing of that other good Family over the Way, and that Mr. .....*s* the Clothier went constantly to Prayers every Morning and Night, I got Acquaintance with the Young-man, his Apprentice, and got him to ask his Master to give me leave to come there at these Times.

Ma. Well, Thomas, this is a well contriv'd Story, but what is this to Six a Clock in the Morning, *Thomas?* which at this time of the Year, is alway before Day, and before he is up to be sure.

Tho. If you please to enquire, *Sir*, into the Orders of his Family, you will find that he is up every Morning in the Year by Six a Clock, and calls them all to Prayers before they go to work.

Ma. And what mean you by getting that Boy to do this for you; that does not hang together at all? *Why*, he is the wickedest, proflagatest young Villain that ever came into any good Man's House: His Master was talking, in my Hearing, but the other Day, of sending him to the House of Correction, and spoke to me for a Warrant: your Acquaintance with such a Boy as that, is not likely to be for so good a Purpose; and this Part makes all the rest unlikely, and to be suspected.

Tho. He was so, Sir, that is true; but if you enquire, you will find he is another thing now: God's Grace has made a strange Change in him in a few Weeks past; if you please to inform your self of it, Sir, you may hear from other Hands.

Ma. And is this the whole Truth, *Thomas*? Has this been your whole Business there?

Tho. Indeed it has, Sir.

Ma. You must not think much if I enquire, in order to be better satisfied.

Tho. I cannot expect any other, Sir.

Ma. I shall talk with you farther about it, it is late now.

[*The Master bitterly stung with the Boy's Account of himself, puts off the rest of the Discourse.*

The End of the Third *DIALOGUE.*

NOTES

Notes *on the Third Dialogue.*

THERE seems to be more Circumlocutions in this Dialogue, than in any other, and some may suppose them unnecessary, but if they strictly examine them, they will find them not useful only, but necessary; the last to preserve the Cadence of things, and introduce the Substance of the real Story by necessary Gradations; the Boy's shifting off so many Ways before he directly tells his Master the whole of his Business; this introduces proper Intervals, which are fill'd up with those Parts that relate to the Discourses between the *Master* and the Boy's *Father*, and between the *Boy* and his *Father*; from his Endeavour to hide the Thing, as if it had been a Crime. *Note*, 1. The deference he paid to his Master, and Apprehension of his Displeasure. (2.) His Fear lest he should be deprived of the Liberty he had taken, and rather than lose which, he modestly moves to be put away from his Business. (3.) The Shyness of speaking what he knew touch'd his Master's Behaviour more than his, is a Mark of Modesty, which may be very instructing to Servants, if they please to mark it, in things where their Master's Character may be concern'd: *But above all*, it may be noted, that all these Things tend to bring the Conviction home with the more Energy and Force upon the Conscience of the Master.

1. He

1. He sees *by it* how his Neglect of his Duty exposes his Servants; and where one, as this Lad, has made good Use of it, many others, perhaps, have been push'd into bad Company, and ruined by it.
2. He sees *how* this Neglect exposes his Reputation, and what a Character for a good Family the poor Clothier had obtain'd, that even his Name would protect the Reputation of this Young Man, in frequenting his House; and that so much, that he himself could suspect nothing, but upon Supposition of his going there before the Master was up, and therefore must have some private Business with his Servants.
3. Like the Wise Men of *Athens*, when they were a little touch'd with the Preaching of the Apostle *Paul*, and unwilling to acknowledge it, they put him off with *We will hear thee again of this Matter*, Acts 17. 32. So the Master touch'd and surpriz'd with the Thing which came so very near him, but not yet fully allarm'd with a Sence of his Breach of Duty, *puts it off* with its being late at Night, and he will talk farther about it.

The Master's Discourse with the Young Man's Father contains a great many useful Hints about the Duty of Masters to their Servants. (1.) That they ought to reckon them under their Care as well as under their Government. (2.) That the Charge of the Souls of our Servants lies upon us, as well as those of our Children; the just Distinction between a Parent and a Father, is fruit-

ful

ful of many useful Observations, *the last* is tied by Nature; *the first*, by the God of Nature; *the last* by Affection; *the first* by Duty; *but both* are tied to observe the Duty, and discharge the Part of a Christian Parent to the Souls under their Charge, whether Servants, Children, or Relations: That a Servant taken into the Family, becomes a Child of the Family, and ought equally with our Children, to partake of every Part of our religious Duties; such as Prayer, Exhortation, Examination, Instruction, Reproof, Restraint, and Correction: This is farther plain, from what God says of *Abraham*, Genesis 18 19. *That he will command his Children and his Household*; that is, He will discharge faithfully the Duty of a Parent, or Guide, and Governour of a Family; which is shewn in his commanding his whole House, that they may walk in the Ways of God.

Note, How Custom has seem'd to discharge Masters of their Duty.

1. *By the Pride of Servants*, who bringing large Sums of Money, much greater than formerly, seem to expect not to be so much at Command as they used to be: This is a wicked and abominable Custom, and as no religious Parent can be easie in it, so no religious Master ought to be subjected to it; but those Servants who will not be content to submit to Family Instructions, Order, and Restraint, should not be entertain'd *at all*; since one ungovern'd Servant debauches the whole Family.

2. By

2. by the Negligence of Parents who really seem less to concern themselves about the Souls of their Children when they put them out as Aprprentices, than about their learning Trades, doing thei Business, *and the like.*
3. By the the universal backwardness of Masters, who think, *as this Man did*, that they have no Concern upon them about their Servants Souls, or any thing but just to see that their Business is done, and then to let them go where they please, and do what they please; but the Master was convinc'd he was in the wrong, after the Father had effectually laid it before him.
4. A most ridiculous Argument the Master brings, (*viz.*) That he was asham'd to go about calling his Apprentices to Examinations, and Instructions realating to the Matters of Religion; *they would laugh at him!* Note, We are ealier to be laught out of our Duty, than perswaded into it.

From the Whole, Masters of Families may observe, the Duty of instructing, and religiously guiding their Servants, lies indispensably upon them, as much as that of instructing and educating their Children: They are *PARENTS*, that is, *Guides* and *Governours* to their whole House, tho' they are *FATHERS* only to *their Children.*

The

The Second DIALOGUE:

THE *Master* of the Young man aforesaid, whether he had any doubts of the Truth of what he had said to him, and had a Mind, *as he had said to the Lad himself*, to find out the bottom of it, or perhaps, to satisfie himself farther about the Alteration of the wicked Boy, which his own Servant had acquainted him of, or to please his own Curiosity, or directed by Providence for his farther Conviction, *is not material*; but as he is here represented, he makes a Visit over to to his Neighbour the honest Clothier, where discoursing of other things with the good Man and his Wife, he brings this Affair in *thus*, talking of their Servants.

I remember, Neighbour, you were once complaining of a very bad Servant you had, and talk'd as if you wanted a Warrant of me to send him to the House of Correction.

Clothier. Yes an't please your Worship, I did so.

Note, He was an Alderman in the Country Town, and so a Magistrate at that time.

Alderman.

Alderman. Well, and pray how does he behave himſelf now? Shall you want a Warrant, Neighbour? You know I ſhall always be ready to ſerve you in any thing I can; it ſhall coſt you nothing if you have any ſuch Occaſion.

Clo. I hope not now, Sir, I think that Lad is much reformed; tho' I have had many bad Servants, I never had a worſe than he was, but he is wonderfully changed; *however*, I thank your Worſhip for your kind Offer.

Clo. Wife. You are very happy, *Sir*, in that part, for you have very good Servants.

Ald. Truly, *but indifferent*; I have had my ſhare of Trouble that way as well as you.

Wife. I am ſure you have ſome very good ones.

Ald. Well, but I am very glad to hear that your bad one is mended.

Clo. I thank you, *Sir*, indeed he is very much mended.

Ald. It is very rare that bad Servants grow better, I have often found that good Servants grow worſe; I am ſure with me they do.

Clo. Indeed, *Sir*, I hope this Lad of mine will prove a very good Young man.

Ald. Good! Why you repreſented him to me as one of the worſt Wrethes that ever came into your Houſe; if I remember right, you ſaid he was given to Lying, and Swearing, and ſcoffing at Religion, and at every thing that was good, and was himſelf every thing that was bad.

Clo. Indeed he was ſo, Sir.

Ald. I doubt not you did all you could to reclaim him, I know you would.

Clo.

Clo. I endeavoured, *Sir*, to discharge my Conscience towards him; but I had no Satisfaction in it, *only so far*, that I had done my Duty, I could do no more, and I was quite tir'd out with him, I resolved to put him away, for I could not bear him in my House, among my Children; he was enough to spoil all the Children in a whole Parish.

Ald. You have a great Advantage *Neighbour*, that I have not; I am in such a continual hurry of Business, that I cannot look after my Family as I would do; I have no Leisure to discharge my Duty to my Servants; you have Leisure, Neighbour, and your Servants have the Advantage of it.

Clo. Truly, Sir, If I have Leisure, it is my Loss, for my Livelyhood depends upon my being employed, as well as my Servants; but they that are taught to know their Duty, will always find Leisure to do it; *I make no question*, Sir, but you discharge your self better that way, than I can do.

Wife. It is seen plainly in your Servants themselves, that you discharge your Duty to them, Sir; sure never any body had such Servants as you have.

Ald. Nay, Neighbour! do not say I discharge my Duty better than you; *God forgive me!* I don't discharge it at all to my Apprentices; I take no Care about them.

Clo. Wife. That is then, because they are so good, and so religious, that they need no Inspection; *for you know, Sir*, we are to instruct our Servants as well as our Children.

Ald. Well, I cannot say that I have made that much

much of my Concern; for our Apprentices generally come of pretty good Families, and bring Money with them, and they think themselves above being talk'd to about such things.

Clo. Then they are among those who *Solomon* calls Fools, that despise Instruction, and if they reject your Offers to instruct them, I cannot see what you can do in that Case: That was my very Case with this Boy.

Ald. I perceive you have had a great deal of Trouble with him.

Clo. Yes indeed, so I have, I was quite weary of him.

Ald. He had the Report of a very wicked Boy.

Clo. Indeed I was asham'd to have it said, such a Boy was in my House: I was afraid any of the Neighbours Children should come near him.

Ald. Indeed I have a Young man, I believe is not much better for him; I have been chiding him a little about it: But is he really chang'd and reform'd think you?

Clo. Indeed that he is, and most wonderfully too, *I bless God for it.*

Ald. I question not but you have taken a great deal of Pains with him; but are you not deceiv'd? is he not a cunning Rogue, and plays the Hypocrite?

Clo. If ever there was a true Convert in the World, I believe he is one.

Ald. You are very happy that God has so far bless'd your Endeavours with the Child.

Clo. Wife. Not our Endeavours, *Sir*, at all, we were denied that Blessing, it comes all from you, Sir, the Blessing is from your House.

Ald.

Ald. What do you mean?

Clo: It is a plain Case Sir.

Clo. Wife. If I understand you Right, you spoke as if some of your Servants had received no Good from our William; *If that be so I know not*, but I am sure *William* has received Good from some in your House.

Ald. Yes indeed, I found that a young Lad I have newly bound was acquainted with this Boy of yours: and that he was often abroad with him, and it has caused some Disturbance among us, for knowing your Lad was so wicked a Boy, I forbid him his Company.

Clothier, Pray what do you Call the Lad you speak of?

Ald: His Name is *Thomas*, he is my youngest Prentice.

Clo. Wife, I know not Sir what Harm he may have received from our Boy, *but I can assure you Sir*, Ours has received much Good from him.

Clo. Ay that's the young Man that G O D has made the Instrument; He is a wonderful Child!

Alderm: He the Instrument, How's that possible?

Clo: With GOD *Sir*, all Things are possible: and assure your self Sir, so it is: and such a Convert as this Child is, I neither ever saw, or ever Read of.

Alderman, Why our *Thomas* is a poor melancholy discontented Boy, a meer Child.

Clo: He is such a Child *Sir*, as I never met with the like; I find you do not know him.

Ald. *Why*, I never thought there was any Thing in him, he is but young, and indeed we all thought him young in every Thing, it is true, He is a sober modest Sort of a Boy, and Talks pretty well, but I never saw any Thing extraordinary in him, he is so melancholy and discontented, we thought him distemper'd, and I have been at the Point of turning him away.

Clo. *You know Sir*, the Scripture says, That *out of the Mouths of Babes and Sucklings he has ordained Praise*, this Child *as you call him*, is an excellent Christian, and beyond his Years capable of shewing it. Perhaps you never tried him.

Ald. No indeed *not I*, as I said to you before Neighbour I have no Time to trouble my self about my Prentices I mean as to such Things.

Clo: Wife. And *as I said to you before Sir*, You have no need for it, for your Prentices are fit to Teach others.

Ald. I am glad to hear it is so; but I confess you surprize me with the Thing, how are you satisfied with the Truth of these Things?

Clo: My Wife can give you an Account of the whole Matter, if your Worship pleases to have Patience to hear it.

Ald. *I'll hear it* with all my Heart.

Here the Mistress relates the whole Passage and the Discourse between her and the young Man, in the Room over the Work-House.

Ald. Iam amazed at this Account you give, but Pray

Pray tell me, was all this begun by his keeping Company and Converſing with my Young Man?

Clo: Yes, *all of it*, he was the general Mocker of every Thing that was Good, and began to do ſo in your young Man's Company; and he was the firſt that reproved him for it. And did he it ſo ſeriouſly, and ſo effectually, That it has pleaſed GOD to Work on him *as you ſee.*

Ald. Then I have done that young Man of mine a great deal of Wrong.

Clo; *Wife*, If you have thought any Evil of him *you have wronged him indeed*, for he is ſuch a young Man, as will be a Bleſſing to any Family he comes into.

Ald. Indeed I have wronged him very much, then *eſpecially* if you can give me Satisfaction about one Thing, and which to be free with you, was the principal Reaſon of my coming to Viſit you at this Time.

Clo. We will give you all the Satisfaction we can Sir.

Ald. Why then *I'll tell you*, That *firſt* as I ſaid before, I have had ſome Uneaſineſs at my young Man's keeping Company *as I was informed he did* with this Boy; who I had heard you ſay was ſo Wicked, That ye knew not what to do with him: and talked of ſending him to the Correction-houſe, *but this was not all*, I found my young Man grew Melancholy and appeared diſcontented, *as I told you ſuch now*, as if he did not like his Buſineſs; tho' we cannot ſay, That he Omits or Neglects any Thing, but every Morning before Day he riſes up in the Dark, and goes out ſome where or

other,

other, and stays about half an Hour, and then comes in again, and sits by himself all the rest of the Time till Business begins, and every Night he is missing again till about 9 a Clock, and all the House takes Notice of it; When I came to Examine him about it, it was a long Time before he would give me an Account of it: Nay he rather desired to be put away, and go back to his Father than to give an Account where he spent his Time; till at last I acquainted his Father with it, and threatned him, I would find out the Bottom of it, unless he would make an ingenious Confession, then he gives this for an Answer, That he was over the way at your House here: This increased my Suspicion because of the Hours he kept, which I was sure must be in the Morning before you were up, and I concluded, That this wicked Boy of yours, and he, spent their Time together in some clandestine Wickedness or other, and the Boy would be Ruin'd, all which I was very sorry for, his Father being my very Good Friend.

Clo: I hope Sir you need not be apprensive that he should get any ill in my House.

Ald. No indeed *Neighbour* I should not, so fat as you know of it, but what could their mornings Meetings be for, before you or your Family was up?

Clo: Wife, What Time is it exactly *Sir* that you say he comes and goes.

Ald. As I understand it he goes out about Six, and is back between Six and Seven, which looked to me as if he came hither before you were up, and assoon as he found you beginning to stir, comes

off again, and would not be seen.

Clo: That cannot be the Case *Sir*, for we are all of us up every Day if we are well, before 6 and at our Work presently after Six.

Ald: *Well*, But does he come at those Hours in the Morning, and about 8 a Clock at Night is he here as he tells me, or is he not?

Clo: *Yes*, I cannot deny but the young Man is here at these Hours very often.

Ald. *Nay*, if you do but know of it, I am easy to be satisfied, especially if this had been his Business.

Clothier's Wife, I hope your Worship will not be Angry with us for the young Man coming hither.

Ald. *Not at all*, if you are assured what his Business is.

Clo. It is not for us to say we are satisfied, he is your Servant *Sir*, and if you are not satisfied, I should be very sorry to have him come hither against your mind.

Ald. *I say*, if you are satisfied that his coming hither has been as you relate it, and that he has been a means of doing the young man so much Good, I shall be satisfied to be sure, but what need is there of his coming so early in a morning, and so late at Night, for their Conversation, that indeed I do not understand, it seems to leave me in the Dark a little, and this makes me ask if you are sure of the Thing.

Clo: I will by no means Deceive you *Sir*, you do not rightly understand us, that our Lad has been instructed and brought to a Conviction, and as I believe and hope to a thorough Conversion, by his

his Converſing with the young Man that is your Servant, *this is true Sir*, there is no Room to doubt it, but that his coming over hither Night and Morning is to Converſe with our Lad *William*, that is not the Caſe at all Sir, I hope the young Man did not tell you ſo, if he did I ſhould be ſorry; I can hardly ſuſpect him of ſuch a Thing, I believe he makes more Conſcience of his Words, *than to ſay ſo.*

Ald: No indeed, I will not do ſo much Wrong *he did not ſay ſo*, but the firſt Time I asked him where he had been, and he told me he had been no where but here, I told him if that were true it was well, and I ſhould ask no further of his Buſineſs there, till I was ſatisfied about firſt the Fact it ſelf.

Clo: Wife, I ſhould ha' thought it very ſtrange if he has told you ſo, their Converſation has not been here I can aſſure you, but as I underſtand it has been at your Houſe, or walking in the Fields or at ſuch Times as *you know* Youth can find enough to Converſe in.

Alderman, What then, Can his Buſineſs be here?

Clo: And your Worſhip will not be Angry.

Ald. Not I indeed, he can have been doing no Harm here, I am ſatisfied of that, and *if he had*, I ſhall but diſmiſs him, and let his Father take him to Task, it is no Buſineſs of mine, he is not my Son.

Clo: You miſtake me again, I did not mean Angry with him, but Angry with us.

Alderman, What ſhould I be Angry with you for?

Clo

Clo: Perhaps you may think hard of us, That we should do any Thing where your Family Affairs are concerned, or speak our Minds too freely; I am very sure we have shown no disrespect o you in it Sir in the least.

Ald: I give you my Word, I will take nothing ll from you, *do but* tell me freely the whole Case he making me easie in one Respect, shall fully nake me Amends for any Thing you shall say that nay concern me.

Clo: Why then Sir *the Case is this*, when my Wife heard from our Lad, what she has already elated to you, and had examined *William* more ullie about the Particulars, as how, and upon what Occasion he became acquainted with your oung Man, in what Manner he had discoursed vith him, and what principles of Instruction he e had laid in him, *William* gave her a long Acount of the Conference they had had together, nd how *Thomas* gave him a Bible, and turned own the several Promisory Texts, to encourage im to hope in, and Pray to GOD, and

Here the Clothier Repeats the first Dialogue between the two Boys so far as belonged to the Boy William's *Case.*

And when we heard all this, *you cannot think t strange* that we desired to see and speak with his young Man, *to see* what kind of Youth it must e, to whom GOD had so early given so much race to, and so eminently made an Instrument f, to Work on his Companion: and meerly to

to satisfie this Curiositie my Wife ordered *William* to invite him hither, *which he did*: and brought him over with him, I hope your Worship does not blame us for this, it was with no Design at all but to see and talk with him upon serious Matters, and see whether there was that Foundation in him which our Lad related.

Ald: I can not take any Thing of this ill, I am very well pleased with it, *pray go on.*

Clo: After we had talked a while with him of these Things, he went home again, we did not detain him at all, but my Wife invited him to come again at his Leisure, which he did, this we hope you will not be displeased with, for we are much taken with his Society.

Ald. I am not at all displeased.

Clo: In one of these Visits the young Man appeared more melancholy and more reserved than we thought than usual, and my Wife pressed to know if any Thing troubled him, or if he was not well. He answered he was verie well, but modestly declined telling what troubled him.

Ald. Why this is his Case *at home*, he appears reserved and discontented, and no Body can get it out of him, what is the Matter with him.

Clo: Well my Wife got it out of him *some time after*, when pressing him to tell her what it was that troubled him, he told her his Case was very sad, His Master was a good Man, and he liked his Business very well. but that his Master look'd upon him as a Heathen, or as some vile Creature for that Morning and Evening when he went up he supposed to Prayers with his Children, he would never let him be called up, or admitted to

mor

mong them; so that he said he believed his Master thought him not worthy taking any care of him, or else it was a judgment of GOD upon him for his Sins; and this troubled him so, he could not enjoy himself, and the poor Child wept grievously when he had told it her: *now Sir*, as this relates to your Family Affairs, I was very unwilling to mention it, least you should be Angry.

Ald. Go on, I have no Reason to be Angry at all, neither at you nor at him.

Clo. We conld but pity the poor young Man, and my Wife exhorted him, however to take Care to be the more Diligent in his private Duty to GOD, and not to let the want of Family Prayer be a Means to thrust out Prayer altogether, at this Discourse he wept again more than before, and told her; that he had no retreat for private Prayer, and that when at first he did kneel down by his Bed-side to Pray to GOD, when he went to Bed, the other Aprentices would Laugh at him, Jeer him, and interrupt him; so that he was forced to leave it off again that he was afterwards tempted to believe, That having these Hinderances he was discharged from the Duty, and having no Conveniencies for it, was a just Excuse for omitting it, and the fear that he should grow Loose, and willing to omit his Duty entirely oppress his Mind so, That he thought it would break his Heart. He thought his Father had placed him just in the Devil's Mouth, *I am too plain Sir*, I hope you will Excuse me.

Ald. Your Discourse needs no Excuse, *Pray go on.*

Clo: I was exceedingly concerned for the Young Man, and so was my Wife, and we were both minded to have invited him to come over at our usual Hours of Family Prayer, and Join with us, but as he was your Worship's *Servant* and we did not know how our Hours might interfere with your Time, and his Business; we thought it was not Proper for us, that we might not give you Offence.

Ald. Well that was very obliging too, *but I* should have taken no Offence at it, I Assure you.

Clo. Then you will take the less at what has been done, which was only this, The Young Man finding we did not invite him, which it seems he expected, spoke afterwards to *William* to ask my Wife if we would give him Leave when he might be spared to come over at our times of Worship, and join with us in Praying to G O D Then indeed we thought our selves more obliged *than we were before* to do it, and my Wife sending for him, told him she had invited him before, but that we thought it might give his Master Offence, but that he should be welcome to come when he would leaving it to him to take care that he did not Offend his Master, by being out at such Times as he might be wanted, *withal* telling him that she believed he could not be here at our Morning Prayer, because our Business requiring us to be early at Work, we went always to Prayer exactly at Six a Clock in the Morning in Winter and at Five in Summer, The poor young Man was so glad of the Liberty we had given him to come, That he said he would be sure to be there by

y Six or Five if we begin so soon, tho' he was
o sit up all Night, and indeed we have observed,
hat he was never mist one Morning yet.

Ald: And is all this true? Is this his Business
ere Night and Morning?

Clo. Wife. Indeed this is all Sir that we know
f, I hope it does not displease you.

Ald. As *Judah* said of his Daughter *Tamar*,
He is more righteous than I! he has done his
uty, and I have neglected mine; I am sorry I
ve done him so much Wrong in my Thoughts,
shall love the Boy for it as long as I live.

Clo. But Sir, since you have given me Leave to
eak so freely to your Worship, and have had
is long Account from me, which I assure you is
othing but Truth, will you please to give me
eave to put in one Word of my own in Behalf
this good young Man?

Ald: What is that? *Speak freely*.

Clo: *Why Sir*, That you will be pleased to ad-
it him to your Family Exercises tho' you do
ot the rest of your Apprentices; I know you have
great Family, and you may not think it proper
call them all up, when as the young Man says
ou do your Lady and Children; but this is so
ood, so pious, and so godly a Child, that you
ill be delighted in having him with you, and if
ou should not, it will break his *Heart*; and
en besides, he will have no Occasion to come
er to us, or to rise at such Hours as he is not
ed to, and get cold and many Things may hap-
n to him, I intreat for him, purely because I see
hat a Child he is.

Here the Master is pincht hard, and for a Time sits silent, at last breaks out.

Ald. Alas! Neighbour it is all wrong, the Boy's mistaken, it is I alone am justly reproved in all this, for like a Heathen, and one that has entirely cast off GOD and Religion, I have never kept up any Family Worship at all! I confess it to you freely, and I think in all my Life I have never had such a Stroke to my Conviction as from this poor Boy: I have neither been Father nor Master to my Family, but have been driving after the World as if I had no other Portion, have lived as if I were never to die, and I am afraid I shall die as if I had never lived, the whole Crime lies at my Door.

The Alderman weeps.

Clo: I am sorry I have said so much, I knew Nothing how it was.

The End of the Fourth Dialogue.

The Fifth

Dialogue.

THE Discourse of the Good man and his Wife had such an Effect upon the Country Alderman, especially with the Addition, from the Account he had received of the Conduct of his Prentice, that it caused him seriously to reflect on his Family Conduct, and convinc'd him that he had been quite out of the Way of his Duty as a Master of his Family to his Servants, as well as in his Relation of a Father to his Children; and these Convictions put him upon Resolutions of altering his Conduct in his Family.

But here, as in all such Cases, where a religious Oeconomy is not established in the Beginning, insuperable Difficulties appeared to him, which several Times discouraged him, slackned his Resolution, and almost cooled his Mind, so as to encline him rather to go on in the Neglect as he had begun, believing it too late to reform, till two unexpected providential Accidents surprized him into his Duty, the happy Consequences whereof will appear, for the Encouragement

of other Masters of Families in the like Attempt, of reforming their Practice, and applying themselves to set up a religious Family Government in their Households, notwithstanding all pretended Difficulties.

The Difficulties he had before him were Two, First, he had married a Lady who differed from him in Opinion; he had been bred a Dissenter from the Church, and his Wife had been bred in Conformity to the Church, and continued so: and as this Kind of marrying however not at all unlawful, is not always the greatest Help to, or Forwarder of a religious Family, so he (tho' erroneously) judged his Wife might not be willing to join with him in his Way of Family-Worship, if he should begin it: *Again*, As to his Servants, his Apprentices and Journey-men, several of which he had, were *Men grown*, such as seemed to be past Government, and as they had none of them any appearing Inclination to what was religious, he having always indulged them in a total Neglect of such Things, he thought they would but make a Jest of him, and that he should never be able to bring them to conform to any Thing of Family Orders: As to his Children, they were young, and he did not so much consider them in the Case; and those that were any Thing grown up were abroad at the Boarding-school: Now in both these Cases he was happily disappointed, and Providence removed both the seeming Difficulties, so as to take from him any Kind of Excuse or Pretence for the further Neglect of his Duty.

It soon became known in the House, that *Tho-*

mas

mas the young Lad and his Master had had some Words about his going out every Morning and Evening to the Clothiers; nor could it be hid upon what Occasion he went thither, and his Master had spoken of it, that the young Man should not be hindred, for that he was very well satisfied of the Business he went about. As it was known among the Servants, it could not be concealed from the Mistress, who being a very pious religious Lady her self, seem'd not a little concerned at the Thing, and having observed her Husband to be more than usually melancholly for some Time, imagined something about that Prentice had disturbed him, both which Circumstances put together, occasioned the following Discourse betwixt them.

Wife. My Dear, Pray let me ask one Thing of you, Have you examined any further, since you and I discoursed last of it, about your youngest Prentice keeping bad Hours?

Husband. Yes, *my Dear*, I have, but I do not find there is any Thing in it worth Notice.

Wife. How do you mean *Nothing in it*? it is certain he has a Haunt somewhere in the Town, that he steals out in a Morning before Day, and comes softly in again, as if he were a Thief; and every Evening, as duly as it comes, he is abroad, no Body knows *where*.

Husb. My Dear, I have examined into it.

Wife. Nay, if you are satisfied, I do not use to meddle, especially with *your* Servants; but methinks it is great Pity the Boy should be ruined, he was a pretty sober Lad when he came hither, and if he takes any bad Courses now, even for

his

his Father's Sake as well as his own, methinks something should be done to prevent it, I wish you would have told his Father of it, that he might have taken some Care of him.

Husband. *My Dear*, There is Nothing at all of Harm in the Boy: Be satisfied.

Wife. Nay, I have thought so too, but what can he go out so for then, at such Hours too?

Husband. I have examined into it, *I say*, and am fully satisfied.

Wife. Nay, if I must not know the Case, I will say no more.

Husband. *My Dear*, I do not conceal the Case from thee upon his Account at all.

Wife. *Well then*, I suppose he has promised you Amendment.

Husband. *No indeed*, so far from that, that I have approved of his doing it, and have allowed him to do it, and ordered none of my People to hinder him, as some would ha' done, by taking the Keys of the Door in.

Wife. I do not use to meddle, I say, with your Business, but you may be sure, the seeming Mystery of it tempts my Curiosity to know what the Meaning of it can be; but if you do not think fit to tell me, I shall desist my Enquiry.

Husband. I cannot tell thee the Case.

Wife. *Cannot*, that is still more dark, it is not because you do not know it, *it seems*.

Husband. No indeed, *my Dear*.

Wife. If it is some Secret I should not know *on the least Notice of that*, my Enquiry shall cease.

Husband. I never concealed any Thing from thee my Life.

Wife.

Wife. Nor did I ever discover any Thing yet committed to me, what have I done then that you begin now?

Huſ. I wiſh I had not this Secret to conceal, it is a Burden too heavy for me.

Wife. Then let me bear ſome of it for thee, *my Dear*, cannot I lighten the Load, by taking ſome of it upon my ſelf? I would bear any Burden to remove it from you.

Huſ. This is a Load no Body can bear, a Wound no Surgeon can cure.

Wife. You ſurprize me with the Nicety of the Thing, and ſwell my Apprehenſions perhaps to a greater Degree than it requires: It muſt be ſomething very miſterious, that from the Conduct of a Boy can be ſo eſſential to you: I intreat thee, my Dear, tell me ſo much of it as is proper for me to know, *if any Part of it be ſo*, or tell me that none of it is proper for me to know, and I'll ceaſe my Importunity.

Huſ. My Dear, it is all proper for you to know, and I ought to let you know it, and you both can, and perhaps would aſſiſt to eaſe it, and yet it is very difficult for me to let you know it.

Wife. You leave me in the greateſt Uncertainty now in the World, whether I ſhould importune you any further, or not.

Huſ. I wiſh you would not, and yet I wiſh you would.

Wife. Whether would be moſt for your own Eaſe and Advantantage, for as for a meer ſatisfying my Curioſity, I don't lay any Weight on that now.

Huſ. It would be moſt for my Advantage to have you know it.

Wife. Then if you believe I have been faithful to you, and can still be so, put it in my Power to relieve you; for I have not been insensible that something has lain very heavy upon your Mind for sometime past, sure if I can relieve you, your Remedy is easy.

Huf: I do not say you can entirely relieve me, but you may in Part.

Wife. Let me do my Part then.

Huf: My Part will be still hardest.

Wife: My Dear, amuse me or your self no more, what has this Boy done?

Huf: My Dear, he has done Nothing, which he ought not to have done, and I Nothing of what I ought to have done; he has strove to do his Duty, and deeply reproved me that I have not done mine.

Wife: He has shown more Honesty than Manners then, *sure it was not his Place* to reprove his Master.

Huf. No, *my Dear*, he has not reproved me in Words, he hath rather used more Modesty in that than consisted with Truth; but his Actions have given me the severest and most just Reproof that ever I had in my Life.

Wife: Nay, if you acknowledge it just ---

Huf: Or else it would be *an Insult*, not a Reproof; no Doubt it is just, the Case is this, You know, I mentioned to you once before my Dissatisfaction at the Boy's Conduct, and you gave me some Hints your self of his being melancholly and discontented, upon which, I acquainted his Father with it, but his Father threw it back upon me to examine it my self, and a long Dispute we had,

about

about whose Duty it was to take Cognizance of the Morals and Behaviour of Prentices.

Wife: What could you dispute about that?

Huſ: Why, I alledged he was his Son, that I could do no more than acquaint him with his Conduct and that he muſt take Care of the reſt; that my Part was to teach him his Trade, and ſee that my Buſineſs was done, but as to the reſt it lay upon him, and that I had diſcharged my ſelf in giving him this Account of his Son. He affirmed the contrary, that I was in his Place effectually, that as I had a Right to his Time, ſo I was obliged to exact an Accout of it from him, as much as I would of Money committed to him to pay, *and the like*, and ſo we fell into a long Diſpute about a Parent and a Father; he affirmed that I was a *Parent* to the Boy, tho' not a Father, and that the Duty of taking Care of him both Soul and Body was mine.

Wife: I am not capable to argue theſe Things, but I muſt confeſs, I muſt be very much of his Opinion, for I think when a Father commits his Child to us, if he puts his Body under our Care, and not his Soul, pray what muſt become of the Youth? muſt he be left without Government to be ruined?

Huſ. Why, If that be my Duty, I have ſadly neglected it.

Wife. Indeed, my Dear, I have often thought ſo, eſpecially when I have heard you ſay to your Prentices, that you only required their conſtant Attendance at ſuch and ſuch Hours, and that for the reſt of the Time they might go where they pleas'd: I could not think young men ſhould be

lef

left so entirely to their own Disposal, I am per swaded no sober Father would like it; I am sure if any of my Sons should come to be put out, should be very sorry to put them to a Master tha should do so.

Hus: I see I have been in an Error, but wha should *I* have done?

Wife. My Dear, Why do you ask me wha you should do? am *I* fit to teach you?

Hus: Indeed any Body may teach me, I hav been taught lately by a meaner Instructor tha you.

Wife. It may be so, *my Dear*, but I am non of those Wives that set up to teach their Hus bands.

Hus: But you may give your Advice.

Wife. In such Cases, there is little Differenc betwixt advising and teaching, except in the Ar rogance of the Word; besides, Advice is gene rally asked before it is given, if it be given befor it be asked, it is rather an Admonition or Reproc than an Advice.

Hus: But my Dear, you might abate Ceremo nies with me, what would you have supposed t have been my Duty as a Master? have not enough to do to teach them their Trade, and se them do my Business?

Wife: If you will have it be so that *I* mus give my Opinion, *I* must be very plain, that think you have a great deal more to do; tha they are committed to your Charge by their *Pa* rents, that their whole Behaviour is under you Care, and that tho' serving God is their Duty, i is your Duty to see, *as far as in you lies*, that the perfor

erform it; and at your Hands their Souls will be required, if you neglect *your Duty*, and indulge them in the Neglect *of their own.*

Huſ: But *my Dear*, you muſt explain the Words *as far as in me lies*, that is the Thing I peak of, my Buſineſs is their Work, if they neglect that, I am to ſee it remedied; but as to their Morals and Religion, if I ſee Cauſe to diſlike, I acquaint their Parents; is not that doing the Thing as far as in me lies?

Wife. I cannot ſay *that it is*, you may do much more than that, or elſe what does that ſignifie; for when a Father knows of his Son's wicked Courſes, what can he do? He is under your Care for Correction, and under his Father's only for Admonition, for he is your Servant.

Huſ: I warrant their Fathers would think it very hard that I ſhould correct one of them.

Wife. I believe you ſhould take it very ill to have one of their Fathers come to your Shop and *cane* or *correct* one of your Prentices, you would ſay he took the Work out of your Hands.

Huſ. I cannot take that Pains with them, *I'll rather take none*

Wife: Indeed, *my Dear*, you had better take none; for 'tis but murdering youth, and robbing their Fathers, to take young Men, and then keep them under no Government.

Huſ: But Youth are come to that paſs, that they will be under no Government now.

Wife: My Dear, there is hardly any young Man ſo ill taught, but if he is begun with at firſt, will ſubmit to Government: I do not ſay they will all be the better for it; but there is a great

Dif-

Difference between a young Man's not profiting by Instruction, and refusing to submit to it.

Husb. My Dear, what can I do?

Wife. My Dear, You are no ignorant Person, you do not want to have me say what you can do, you know what you ought to do, it is not my Part to teach you your Duty.

Husb. Abate that Nicety for once, *my Dear*, and make no Scruple to say what you think is my Duty to my Servants; tho' you do not think it your Part to teach me my Duty, you may be a Means to convince me, that something was my Duty which I did not think was my Duty before; and I may learn from you what you do not set up to teach; there need not be so much Shyness between a Wife and her Husband, that for Fear of taking too much upon you to teach me, you should omit a kind Hint to me of what you think I ought to do.

Wife. I do not restrain for that so much, as that I think you know your Part so well, that it is perfectly unreasonable and needless for me to offer any Thing; besides, Family Government is so natural a Consequence to the very Being and Constitution of Master and Servant, Father and Child, Husband and Wife, that no Husband *of your Capacity* can be ignorant; the Scripture is so full on the Side of those who are to be governed, that it cannot but lead directly to those who are the Governours: Wives are bid to submit themselves to their Husbands, Children to obey their Parents, Servants to be subject to their Masters, all which naturally implies, That the Government of the whole Family devolves entirely upon

upon the Head of the Master, who has the whole Charge of them, Soul and Body, and is accountable for their Miscarriages, so far as those Miscarriages are owing to the Omission of his Duty.

Husband. So that you put the Master entirely upon the Father's Place, and the Servants in the Posture of Children.

Wife. Indeed I can think no otherwise, *especially Apprentices*, who by their Indentures are entirely subjected to the Master's Government.

Husband. But my Dear, we differ then about the Word *Government*, and how far that extends beyond my commanding them in the Offices of an Apprentice, and their doing my Business.

Wife. Indeed I think it extends to every thing else, we are obliged by the Fourth Commandment not to suffer our Servants to break the Sabbath, and so of every Duty in the other Commands; and no Question but 'tis our Duty to restrain them from every evil Action whereby they may offend GOD, or wrong their Neighbour, I mean as much as is in our Power; and on the other hand, we are to encourage them in all that is good, *viz.* in their Duty to GOD and Man, and this by all possible Methods, such as Exhortation, Command, Advice, but especially Example, Praying to GOD for them and with them.

Husband. If all this be my Duty, I have sadly neglected it, both to Servants and Children too.

Wife. Indeed, *my Dear*, I have often thought so, with a great deal of Grief.

Husband. But why then, *my Dear*, would you not tell me so before now, and not now without so much Difficulty, and a kind of Violence?

Wife

Wife. *My Dear*, I have been backward perhaps more than has been my Duty, lest you should think I did what it was not my Place to do; besides, you know our Opinions differ in some Things, and I did not know whether you might listen to me on that Account.

Huf. Why, *my Dear*, that very Thing has been my Hinderance, lest *my Dear* being of a different Opinion as to the Form of Prayer, should not like it, or care to join with me in it.

Wife. You very much wronged me then, *my Dear*, I hope tho' we differ in Opinion about Religion, we are not of two Religions; we may have differing Thoughts of the Manner and Forms of Worship, but not I hope of Worship it self I hope we pray to the same GOD, and in the Name of the same Intercessor; nor is our Difference about Forms such, that you should refuse my Prayers because of the Form, or I yours for Want of a Form; that GOD to whom we pray certainly respects the Heart, and not the Form so that with the Form or without it, we shall be equally heard if we pray in Faith, and equally rejected if we do not.

Huf. And would you have joined with me *my Dear*, in Family Prayer, if I had proferred it?

Wife: Most heartily, *my Dear*, and I wonder what Kind of Heathen you have taken me for that you should doubt it; I am sure it has often troubled me to see the Family brought up with no Manner of Regard to the Worship of God in it I was never bred so, and I have had many a sad Heart about it on the Account of my Children.

Hu

Huſ. And never would eaſe your Mind by peaking a Word about it to me before.

Wife. That may have been a Fault, but I did ot ſo much think it my *Duty*, or rather indeed, lid not ſee it likely to have Effect.

Huſ. But would you rather have your Chil-lren bred up without being introduced into the Ways of God and Religion, than break in a lit-le upon what you thought was not your Place ?

Wife. I have endeavoured to do my Duty vith my little Ones as well as I could.

Huſ. And I have the Reputation *of that little oo*, as you ſhall hear preſently, which I am ſure, nd God knows, I do not deſerve in the leaſt.

Wife. Alas! What can a Wife do in ſuch a amily as ours is ? it is not worth naming : The Worſhip of God in a Family ought to be avowed nd owned by the Maſter of the Family, and per-ormed either by himſelf or Chaplains, with due Gravity and Solemnity, ſuitable to the Authority of the Maſter of the Houſe, and ſuitable to the Authority and Greatneſs of that God to whom t is directed ; and there is not a Servant ſo wick-d, ſo profligate, ſo profane, but would reverence he Practice, if they did not profit by the Perfor-nance.

Huſ. Truly, *my Dear*, one of the greateſt Dif-icúlties was on your Account, and I have often hought it the only Allay to our Happineſs, in oming together.

Wife. It is very hard you ſhould think ſo ill of ne, and not try whether it was with Juſtice, or o, eſpecially when your Information was ſo eaſy.

Huſ. I was loth.

Wife.

Wife. Loth to come to the *Duty*, and he that tempted you to neglect that Part, threw this wicked Thought in your Way for an Obstruction, not giving you Leave to clear up your own Thoughts, and my Innocence by asking me the Question.

Huſ. Indeed I have done thee Wrong, but I hope the *Devil* has had no Share in it.

Wife. My Dear, How was it possible such a hard Thought could enter into thy Heart else of me? Had I not a religious Education? And is not my Father and Mother still living, who keep as regular a Family, and the Worship of God as constantly performed in it, as in any House in the Nation? & have you seen any Thing in me that looks like a Willingness to have my Family without it? as to my scrupling to join with Dissenters, tho I think it my Duty not to break off from the Church, yet sure I have not such an Opinion of conscientious Dissenters as to refuse to pray to God with them: How could you think I would have married a Dissenter, if that had been my Judgment? And have you not seen me readily join in Family Worship at your Brother's, as you have done with us at my Father's? Surely, if we have both joined with other Families of either Sort, we could not have wanted Charity so much as to have refused to do it in our own House.

Huſ. Truly, *my Dear*, you argue so reasonably in this, that I see plainly it has been all my own Crime, and I have done thee a great deal of Wrong, which I am very sorry for.

Wife. If *my Dear* will reform the Thing itself, the Wrong done to me shall never be mentioned

oned as long as I live, I have too much Grief the Neglect, not to bury all my Complaints the Satisfaction I should have to see it recti-d.

Husb. If you knew the stinging Reproof I have d another Way, you would say I wanted no ther Animadversion.

Wife. I have interrupted you too long in that, ay let me hear it out, if I remember, you were on the Discourse with *Thomas*'s Father, pray on with that.

Husb. Why, *my Dear*, he threw all the Work ck upon me, *as I told you*, but I believe the Is-e was, that both he *and I also*, talked to *Thomas* out his Discontent, and his Melancholly, and out his going out of *Doors*.

Wife. Very well, and what Account did he give himself?

Husb. Why, that of his Melancholly came in of ourse, but as to his going abroad before Day, *d the like*, and especially on the Sabbath-day in e Evening, he told me he went over the Way Neighbour M———'s the Clothier's.

Wife. What could he be doing there? It must with some of their Servants then, for they e very sober, good People, he could get no Ill hong them; but they have a Boy, a young llow their Prentice, that is the wickedest young logue that ever was heard of, it must be some ly Haunt he has got with him, *I doubt*, that rries him thither, *and if it is that*, the Boy is ndone.

Husb. That was the very thing I was afraid of o, but we are both strangely mistaken, *Thomas*

is quite another Lad than any of us took him for, and instead of learning Wickedness from that vicious Boy, he has been *God*'s Instrument to make that Boy the greatest Convert ever you heard of.

Wife. I am surprized, it can never be! Are you sure you are not imposed upon?

Huf. No, no, I am not imposed upon, he has more Grace and more Goodness in him than ever I heard of in a Child of his Age; for he is but a Child, and he has been the greatest Reproof to me in the Neglect of my Family Government that ever I met with.

Wife. Tell me these Words more plainly, for I am more curious to know them than any Thing I ever heard of.

Huf. I will, *my Dear*, I'll tell thee all the particulars.

Here the Husband relates exactly the last Conference he had with his Prentice, Dial. 3.

Wife. How pretty and modest was that Answer That you was not pleased to admit him to your Family when you went to the Worship of *God*.

Huf. Ah, *my Dear*, But how bitter a Reproach was it, *think you*, to me, when my own Heart struck me with the Thoughts? *Wretch that I am*, how innocently this Child thinks, *as indeed it is rational to imagine*, that it should be impossible but that *God* must be worshipped in every Christian Family, and only suggest, that I had shut him out, or did not think him worthy to join with

ıs, whereas the plain but dreadful Truth is, I ave lived like a Heathen all my Life, and never ad worſhipped God in my Family at all.

Wife. He ſaw no Great Appearance of it, I conſeſs, I wonder how he had ſuch a Thought.

Huſ. Yes, *my Dear*, there was ſome Appearrce of it, but not on my Side, *as I ſaid before*; hat I had the Reputation of what *you had perormed*; ſo, *no doubt*, he had ſeen, or ſome of the Children, or Servants had ſpoken of your calling he Children into your Cloſet with you, and he uppoſed we might be all together at Prayer; I viſh it had been really ſo.

Wife. But *my Dear*, what Satisfaction have ou of the Truth of all this?

Huſ. I am not eaſily impoſed upon, *my Dear*, took little Notice of the Thing from him, nor ave him any Reaſon to think I believed him, but old him; I ſhould talk further with him about it, ndeed, to tell you the Truth, I could not hold to alk any more to him at that Time.

Wife. And how will you be ſatisfied? Cannot ou enquire of Mr. M:::: the Clothier, or of is Wife? They are both good conſcientious eople, and what they ſay may be depended upon, wiſh you had asked them.

Huſ. Indeed, *my Dear*, I have been there this fternoon, 'tis there I have received the full Conviction of my own Neglect of Duty, of the wicked ad's Converſion, and of our own Boy's Character, he Particulars will amaze you if you were to hear hem.

Wife. *My Dear*, I beg you let me hear it all, or the Story too nearly concerns me, not to have

me very much moved with it, and besides, it is very affecting in it self.

Husb. You shall, *my Dear.*

Here the Husband relates the whole Discourse between him and the Clothier, and his Wife, as in the third dialogue, and the Account of her discourse with the once wicked, but now converted Boy.

Wife. This is a surprizing Story, what can there be in the Boy to do all this? have you talked with him your self?

Husb. I have talked a little with him, indeed I was so touch'd with the Reproof which his Discourse (*innocently in him, for he perceived No thing*) was to me, when he said, *It grieved him that I did not think him worthy to be reckoned among my Family, or admitted to the Worship of God with me and my Children*; that as I told you before I could not bear to stay and talk with him any longer lest he should perceive it.

Wife. It was very cutting indeed, all the Part of it considered.

Husb. The Tears stood in my Eyes in Sight of all my Endeavours to the contrary: Indeed, how could I forbear, when I knew how I had lived and that I had never troubled my self about any such Thing as the Worshiy of God with my Family, tho' I knew well enough how much it had been my Duty to ha' done it.

Wife. I cannot say but I am glad it has happened so, tho' I think its coming from the Boy was so odd; Are you sure the Boy did not do it by way of Jeer.

Husb.

Huſ. Not in the leaſt, the Modeſty and Innocence of the Boy, and his Backwardneſs to ſay ny Thing at all, leave no Room for ſuch a Thought.

Wife. I wiſh you would talk with him again, erhaps you may hear more from him, that may xplain it all to you.

Huſ. I intend it, *my Dear.* I'll go down and lk with him juſt now.

he Maſter goes down, and going into a Cloſet which he had near the Compting-Houſe, hears the young Man engaged with one or two of the Journeymen, and the reſt of the Prentices, about the Subject in Hand; upon which, he places himſelf undiſcovered, and hears the following Diſcourſe.

Journeyman. Well, *Youngman*, What, you ve been examined about your Morning Walks, nderſtand, I wonder your Maſter found you t no ſooner.

Thomas. Perhaps if you had told him of it ſoon- he would have known it ſooner.

Four. You are miſtaken in the Informer, tho' oever it was, he was much your Friend.

Tho. Where did the Friendſhip of it ly?

Four: Where, why in preventing your ruining r ſelf; when young Boys, *like you.* get ſuch unts, and go out of their Maſters Houſes at h Hours privately; it is very ſeldom for any od, and quickly ruins them.

Tho. That Word very ſeldom implies that you ieve it may be ſometimes on a good Account.

four. Ay, ay, *ſometimes*, but very ſeldom; what

Good

Good could you be doing at that time of Day, I wonder?

Tho. That is bringing me to a second Examination, I have given an Account of that to my Master and to my Father already, and they are satisfied; Why should you take me to Task?

Jour. Nay, *that's true*, I have Nothing to do with it, I care not what Hours you keep, or what Company you keep, or how you ruin your self what is it to me?

Tho. Well, I am the less obliged to you for that.

Jour. Why, *so you are*; but when you say you Master is satisfied, I must be your Pardon *for that*.

Tho. I do not believe a Word of that *I assure you*.

Eldest Pren. Nay, now you wrong him indeed for *I assure you*, my Master told me he was satisfied about it, and that I should not hinder him, as he had resolved to do, by taking out the Key of the Warehouse door, and carrying it up to my Master every Night.

Jour. Nay, if my Master be satisfied, I have done; either there must be some Mistery in then, or he has told him some fine Story that has deceived him, the young Rogue has a soft Tongue.

Eld. Pr. I could say more of it, if I thought *Thomas* would not think I spoke to expose him.

Tho. Your withholding it in such a Manner, more my disadvantage another Way; for now looks as if it were some very bad Thing; though have not been forward to tell it, yet I am not shye of it, as to be willing to have it thought a Crime.

Jour. I am very glad if it be no Crime, *Thomas* I never wish'd you any ill.

Pre

Pren: Truly, it is so far from a Crime, that if had known before how it was, I *would ha' gone with him*, if they would have let me; for to be ree with you, upon full Examination, it appears hat he went over to Mr. M:::s the Clothier Night and Morning to Prayers, and my Master as examined it to the utmost, and is satisfied that t has been nothing else.

Jour: To Prayers! nay if that is all, that's very ell indeed, *and of that presently*; but you make he smile to hear you say you would ha' gone along ith him.

2*d. Prentice.* Ay, that would make any Body augh; *I dare say* he never said his Prayers in his ife.

1*st: Prentice.* It's no Matter for that *Jonathan*, or is that any Thing to you, if I ha n't, there s he more Need to begin now; I doubt you have o Need to reprove me.

2*d: Pr.* Why so?

1*st. Pr:* Why, ha n't I heard you ridicule all ich Things, and banter the honest Man over the Way for going to Prayers in the cold Mornings efore it was Day? And didn t you use to jeer oor *Thomas* here when he came first, because hen he went to Bed at Night, he would kneel own by his Bedside to say his Prayers.

2*d. Pr.* Why now you do, *as you did before*, harge me with your own Crime; did not you o so as well as I, and Mr. M:::: (that's the ourneyman) too.

Thomas. I committed a greater Crime than any f you, *in that Part*, I wish I had not.

1*st. Prentice.* What's that, *Thomas*?

Thomas:

Thomas. In letting your wicked scoffing at me prevail with me more wickedly to neglect my Duty, if I had continued to pray to God, as I ought to have done, He would soon have made you ashamed of mocking me, or ha' made me not regard it. *The Lad weeps*

1st: Pr. Indeed, *Thomas*, I was ashamed of it when I did it, and I am more sorry for it now, since you tell me it mastered your Resolution, and made you leave it off; I have thought on it a hundred Time *since that* with Regret; that tho' I did not pray to God my self, I should discourage another: For whether I performed it or no *my self*, I never Thought the worse of another that did, for I knew it was what every one ought to do.

Tho: That makes your Fault the worse to neglect it, when you knew you ought to have done it, and this is just my Fault, I am in the same Case.

1st: Pr. No, *Thomas*, There's this Difference between you and I, you have repented and amended it, and I have not.

Tho: I think it almost *broke my Heart*, and yet I know not whether to call it Repentance or no for what's all my Trouble at it in Proportion to the Crime? there may be much Sorrow where there's little Repentance.

Four: Why, *Thomas*, has that been the Cause you have been so melancholly of late?

Tho: Is not that Cause enough? However, I do not say that has been all the Cause.

Four: Well, he has been ill used By us all, I *must own that*, and he does not deserve such Usage from us, I think we have acted by him like perfect

erfect Infidels; never was poor Youngman so reated *for serving God* sure: What Kind of Creatures have we been?

Prentice. I confess I am amazed at it, I did not se to do so; I know not what possess'd me at that ime.

Four. And was this the Reason of your going ver to Mr. ::::'s, *Thomas*?

1st. Pr. No, no, it was because they kept a egular Family there, and go constantly to Pray- s Night and Morning: Mr. :::: is a very good lan, every Body knows that; and I observe every ody, nay, the wickedest People in the Parish, ve that Man: I never heard any Body speak a isrespectful Word of him, but our *Jonathan* ere, that laughed at him for rising before Day, the cold Weather, to go to Prayers.

2d. Pr. Yes, you have heard his own Prentice *Will* do the same Thing.

Four. That's a wicked young Rogue indeed, ou have named a pretty Youth for our Example.

2d. Pr. You see all his Prayers, and his being good a Man, does him no good; he can't make m a good Boy.

Tho. You know Nothing of that Boy, and very ttle of what you talk of; I wish I was as good a oy as that *Will* is now.

1st. Pr. It's very true, that Boy is the Wonder this Town, he is the greatest Penitent, and is rned the sobereſt, most religious young Man hat ever was heard of.

Four. I am amazed at it; why then you see, *Jonathan*, what the having a good Master has done.

1st. Pr. Nay, that has not been it neither, and

to do Justice, though *Thomas* says modestly, that he wishes himself as good as *William*; I have a very good Account that *Thomas* was the first Means of reclaiming him.

Tho. God's Grace has been the Means, and a religious good Instructer at Home: I am uncapable to do any Thing of that Kind; his Master and Mistress have been the Instruments, he is very happy in coming into such a Family.

Jour. But was this really the Reason of *Thomas*'s going over thither so, every Night and Morning?

1st. Pr. Yes, it was, my Master says he has examined it; why are you so unbelieving?

Jour. Nay, *for no ill*, I could not have expected it, but I shall love him the better for it as long as I know him; I wonder what my Master thinks of it, or says to it.

1st. Pr. Says! I told you, didn't I? He is very well satisfied in it, and ordered me that I should not hinder him.

Jour. God forbid any should hinder him; *for my Part*, if I was ten Times wickeder than I am, I would never wish to make another be so.

2d. Pr. You are all growing mighty good of a sudden, this Fit of Religion will be over with you by and by, when you come to * *Kate*'s down the Street.

* *An Alehouse in the Town, which it seems they haunted too much.*

1st. Pr. Your Eyes shall never see that of me again, nor see me at that wicked House again.

Tho. Do not undertake for that in your own Strength, lest you are left to know your self by your Fall.

1st. *Pr.*

1st. *Pr.* I hope God will give me Grace to keep hat Resolution.

Tho. You must seek it then, *Ask, and thou halt receive.*

1st. *Pr.* I wish I had been in such a House as that Clothier's, I was never brought up to live as ye do here.

2d. *Pr.* Why, can't our Master go to Prayers with us, as well as that poor Man does?

Four. What, for you to laugh at him, as you did at the poor Clothier, and at *Thomas* too.

d. *Pr.* Yo i have all done it as much as I.

Tho. I don't doubt, we all fare the worse for t, as well those who are not guilty, as those who are.

2d. *Pr.* How do you mean?

Tho. Mean, Why it is plain enough; my Master and Mistress go to Prayers every Night nd Morning with themselves and the little Children, and if he did not take us for a scoffing, it: religious, reprobate Pack, that would be never the better for it, and would but make a Jest of t, and of him too, *to be sure*, he would call us all up, but he sees how we live, and does not count us worthy to be admitted.

1st. *Pr.* Are you sure of that, *Thomas?*

Tho. *Sure of it!* Why, is there any sober Man in the World that calls himself a Christian, and does not do it?

Four. Poor *Tom is*, thou knowest but little of the World; is there one Family in Ten that does? Nay, is there one Family in this Town that does, except the good Man over the Way, the Clothier.

Tho:

Tho: Yes, my Father does, I never knew him omit it in my Life, if he was well; and our Minister does, and some that I know in the Town; nay, I know none that do not.

Four: I am sure, I know twenty Families in the Town that do not, and yet call themselves good Christians too; and I never believed our Master did.

Tho: I'll never believe such a Thing of my Master; besides, ha'n't I heard the little Children say to one another, they must go up to Prayers?

Four. Nay, then *to be sure*, he does; I am very glad glad of it, I wish he would call us all up.

Tho: No Question, if my Master knew you wish'd so, he would; but we don't live as if we desired it; I believe that is the Reason we are left to live like Heathens, as we are.

1st. Pr: I am sorry we have given him so much Cause to think so, and indeed, *Thomas*, it is but too true.

Four: Well, for all that, he might have gone to Prayers.

Tho: So he does, *I tell you*, but does not think us fit People to join with him.

Four: Why, the worse we are, have we not the more Need of being pray'd for?

Tho: But *I cannot but say*, he might have good Reason to shut us out, that our bad Example might not be shewn to his Children.

Four: Why, thou makest us worse than Heathens, Boy; What do'st mean? Do you believe, that if my Master should come now, and say to

us

us all, that tho' he finds we do not regard such Things, yet that he resolves to go to *Prayers* every Night and Morning, and we may come if we will, that we would not all say, we would come with all our Hearts; I'm sure I would for one.

1*st*: *Pr*: I am sure. I'd down on my Knees, and thank him for it, for I am more concerned at seeing how we live *now*, than ever I was.

Tho: I am sure I'd thank him, and thank God for it too, and think it the best Day that I ever saw in my Life.

2*d*: *Pr*: I have heard all your Discourse, and have said but little, but I'll tell you, I'll never jest with any Body for praying to God again while I live, I wish my Master would begin with us and try.

Any one may judge, how the Master, who heard all this Discourse, was moved with it; being before affected with the Sense of having lived in a total Neglect of his Duty to God and his Family, and having thus providentially the great Obstruction to his Duty removed, by hearing all his Men-servants, who he thought refractory, and ungovernable, declare themselves toucht with a Sense of their Loss, in being shut out from the Worship of God, and professing their Willingness to join in a religious Regulation, and their Desire of having their Master begin it.

Wherefore, coming hastily out of his Closet into the Place, and the Youngmen rising up to be gone, he bids them all stay and sit still:

I

I have heard all your Discourse, says the Master, *and I bless God that I have heard it; I am very well pleased with every Part of it*: I do own to you all, *that it has been a Hinderance to my Desire of setting up the Worship of God in my Family, that I thought my young Men having had their full Liberty in the World, made no Account of such Things, and might perhaps mock at me for it, as I have heard you have done at the poor Clothier over the Way; and tho' it was my Duty to have done it, however you had behaved, yet I confess it has been such a Snare to me, as has kept me back from what I knew to be my Duty: But since I have providentially heard your Discourse upon this Subject, and that you seem to be sensible of your Duty, and of your Loss in the Omission of mine, and appear willing to join in a solemn Manner in Family Prayer, I will not be wanting to you, nor wanting to myself in performing my Duty any longer, but according to my Duty, and your Desire, call you all up together, with the rest of my Family to worship God, and pray to him for his Blessing, I hope you will convince me you are in earnest, by your Attendance at that Time.*

The Journeyman told him, Yes, *for his Part*, he would with all his Heart.

The first Prentice told him, that since he had heard him make a Promise

mise

miſe to thank him upon his Knees, he would perform it ; *and kneeling down*, he thanked God that had put it in his Heart, and thank'd his Maſter as he had promiſed, and aſſured him the very Thoughts of it rejoiced his Heart.

Poor *Thomas* the youngeſt Prentice, his Heart was ſo full he cried for Joy, and could not ſpeak a Word.

The other Prentice told his Maſter, he was very ſorry he had been one of them that had hindred him before, but aſſured him it ſhould be ſo no more.

The Good Man went up with Joy to his Wife, and giving her an Account how his econd Difficulty was thus providentially re-noved, told her the whole Paſſage : The ious Lady rejoicing at the Thing, and willing o prompt him on to put his Reſolution in Practice, before it might cool and fall off a-gain, perſwaded him the ſame Evening to call is Family together, and beginning with read-ng the *Scriptures*, to go to *Prayer* with them, *which he did* ; and from that Time forward, e had always ſober, religious Servants, and ept a moſt regular Family, exactly and onſtantly performing Family Worſhip, in-ſtructing

structing and catechising both his Children and Servants, to the great Encouragement and Increase of true Godliness and holy Living in that Town, by his extraordinary Example.

The End of the Fifth Dialogue, and of the Second Part.

PART II

PART III

The First DIALOGUE.

AT the End of the first Part of this Work, the Father of the Family having effectually set about reforming his House, and brought all his Children *except his two eldest* to conform to his new Regulation, this Part gives something of an historical Account of the two Refractory Rebellious Branches of that Family. (*viz.*) The eldest Son and the eldest Daughter, *the Son* pursuing the Dictates, *not of his Reason*, but of his Passion, and having some Estate independent of his Father, gratifies his Disgust at his Father's imposing upon him, *as he calls it*, and goes abroad to Travel: His Conduct *as a Pattern or warning to Disobedience* is followed by continual Judgments, Disasters, and Distempers, till his Estate wasted and gone, he is brought to humble himself to his Father, and submit to him, however unwillingly and unreformed, not as a true Penitent, but for meer Subsistance, and for want of Bread.

This is improved to be instructive of many Things, both to Children and Parents.

1 It shews something of the mischievous Consequence of leaving Estates to Children intirely independant of their Parents; especially, where no visible Objection lie's against the Trust being reposed in the Parent: *and tells us*, That tho' in former Cases it may be necessary to do thus, yet it ought to be avoided as much as possible, it being in general a fatal Obstruction to Paternal Authority, a Foundation of Childrens refusing Instruction, and especially of their not bearing Reproof, beside that, often times the Consequences are such, That the Children had better be without such Estates.

2 This Example warns Children that tho' they may *by Provision of Frienas* be made independant of their Parents, they are not thereby discharged of their Duty to their Parents in the least, and great Judgments from Heaven generally follow those who totally cast off the Subjection they owe to their Parents on that Account.

3 *First* or *Last*, a Contempt of paternal Instruction is nothing else, but laying in a great Stock for Repentance.

The Daughter who of the two appeared the most Obstinate, and could not bear the Restraint which her Father's new Discipline obliged her to, got leave

leave of her Father and Mother, to go and live with her Aunt, *her Father's Sister*, who lived at some Distance from them in London, where tho' the Family was strictly Religious *as is before noted*, yet being there but as a Guest, she could better comply with it than at Home, where she had been used to Liberties, and left to her self, and where the change being by Constraint, was the harder for her to stoop to.

Her Aunt, a sober Religious Gentlewoman, and her Uncle a grave pious good Christian, treated her with great Kindness and Courtesy, and *as she had been very well Bred*, good Manners obliged her to return it, here an unforseen Providence gave a Turn to the whole Course of her Life, the Young Lady being of a good natural Temper, a modest handsome Carriage, and an agreeable Person, her Uncle's eldest Son *by a former Wife* fell in love with her, and by Consent of his Father a Proposal of Marriage was made between them, and this Part is made publick in this Manner, because the Circumstances of this Marriage has some Thing in them, very instructing to young married People, to let them see how much it is their unquestioned and indispensable Duty, to make the good of one anothers Souls, be their principal Care after Marriage, how far it may be the Duty of a Husband to instruct his Wife, and in what Manner, or a Wife her Husband, how far such a Design may be consistent with the tenderest Affection, and how to be manag'd with Decency, Respect, and the due Endearments of a loving and tender Relation, and in short, gives

a brief Scheme of the relative Duties of a married State.

This compleats the Oeconomy of this Work, *the First Part* relating to a paternal Duty, such as Instruction, Reproof, Authority and Discipline in a Father, among his Children. *The second* to the Duty of Heads of Families as Masters of Servants, and how Servants ought to submit to Instruction and Family Regulation, *and this third Part* principally regarding the Duty of Husbands and Wives to exhort and perswade, intreat, instruct, and *by all gentle Means* if possible, prevail and engage one another to a religious holy Life, and to set upa Foundation of religious Worship and Exercise in their Families.

The Introduction or History of this Marriage is not material to our present Discourse, only some Thing of the Characters of the Persons and Families, *more than what has been said already*, may be proper to prevent Digressions in the particular Cases that come after, and these Characters or Descriptions will be found in the first Dialogue and upon the following Occasion.

The Young Gentleman was the eldest Son of the Family, and Heir to his Father who had a good Estate, he had been bred a Gentleman, had a liberal Education, was a handsome agreeable Person and which was beyond all, was *like his Father*, sober, virtuous, studious and religious Gentleman, this Person having been conversant with this young Lady, by the Accident of their being in the House, and her as will appear being very agreeable to him, *however engaged by the Defect of Education in Gayety and Mirth, and hard to be weaned*

weaned, especially by Violence as had been her Case, her Disposition I say being soft and of an extraordinary sweetness in her Temper as will appear in the Process of these Sheets, there appear'd a particular suitableness in them one to another.

The young Gentleman had entertained an Opinion of her being capable to make him a very good Wife, tho' he was not ignorant of her being wild, and gay in her Humour, he had great Proofs by daily Conversation with her, of her being virtuous and modest, even to the utmost Nicety, the goodness of her Temper, and agreeableness of her Person, had engaged his Affections to her, and he had no Reason to believe that she had any Aversion to him, whereupon he broke his Design to his Father, who knowing his Son's Sobriety, and serious Inclination, was the less inclin'd to Thwrat his Affections, and the less afraid to venture him in the Matter of the young Ladie's Humour, which was thought to be a little Extravagant and Gay *as above*, so the Father after some Consideration calling him aside one Morning, spoke to him to this Purpose.

SON,

" I have considered what you said to me about " your Desire to court your Cousin, I am very " willing to gratifie your Inclinations, in any " Thingthat may have a Prospect of making you " Easy and Happy, and shall be as kind to you " with Respect to Estate, as you can expect; but " *you know* she is Gay, and Wild, loves Compa-

" ny and Mirth, and that it was her Impatience " of Restraint in these things, that made the " Breach between her and her Father, and if she " should continue that Humour after you have " married her, I doubt you will have but an un- " comfortable Life with her : *however* I do not " think her of an ill Disposition as to her natural " Temper; and perhaps may be prevailed with " by good Usage and kind Treatment, *which I* " *hope is all the Method you propose to take with* " *her*, to alter her Notions of Things, I think she " seems to be a little come off from some Part of " it, since she came into our Family, I would " have you seriously consider what Hazard you " run in it, *and especially that the Venture is for* " *your Life*; and as I have no other Objection " against it, I shall agree or not agree to it, as " your Inclination shall lead you, only not for- " getting to hint to you *what I hope you do not* " *forget*. (*viz.*) That you ask Council and Di- " rection of him who has said, *Commit thy Way* " *unto the* L O R D, *and he shall Direct thy* " *Steps.*

This Discourse was too Affectionate and Ob liging, not to move a Son of so much Sense and Goodness as he was, which he expresst *as became him* in a dutiful and obliging Manner, and having af- ter further Consideration continued his Inclina- tions, and *not so only but* made some Advances of that Kind *to the young Lady her self*, it became necessary in the next Place to have it moved to her *Father* and *Mother*, and as they were the Relations of the old Lady, *Mother in Law to the young*

young Gentlewoman this occasioned her *at her Husbands Desire* to go to her Sister *the young Lady's Mother*, and break the Matter to her, where after a little other Discourse *needless to our Purpose*, the Mother began with her, and so introduces the following Dialogue between the two Sisters, Mother and Aunt to the young Gentlewoman.

Mo. Dear Sister, I believe you do not doubt your being always welcome to me, and yet I cannot say that I am so glad to see you come hither, *as I used to be.*

Aunt, *Why*, *what's the Matter Sister*, If my coming gives you any Uneasiness, I'll be gone again.

Mo. My Heart misgives me, and I *always* expect something of Evil when you come.

Aunt, Evil, *about what*, I beseech you.

Mo, Why, about this *unhappy Girl* at your House, I ever think you have some dreadful Story or other to tell me of her.

Aunt, What can your *worst Thoughts* lead you to fear of her.

Mo. Dear Sister, what *can I not* fear for her, when I see her treat her Father so, who has loved her so affectionately, and used her so gently in all his Matter, and now has *in a Manner* gone away from him, purely on an Account which all the rest of the Family are thankful for, and what any Child of Sense or Virtue would have loved and valued him for. *As for her usage of me* I take no Notice of it at all, *I forgive her all that.*

Aunt, Well, but you must wait a little, her Temper may be wrought upon by Degrees to be sensible of her Mistake, I hope *Sister* you don't

don't look on her as loſt, *they go far indeed that never return.*

Mo: But have you bad News *now* about her, did not you come *now on Purpoſe* to make ſome Complaint of her to me?

Aunt, I wiſh you would tell me *what you are afraid of* about her.

Mo. Nay, there's nothing ſo bad, that I am not afraid of, what can I expect when GOD has ſo far forſaken her as to have her Fly in her Father's Face, and that purely becauſe he would have her live a ſober religious Life; Pray how does ſhe behave her ſelf?

Aunt, Siſter I will be very plain with you I am very far: you may be ſure, from approving her Behaviour to her Father *or to you,* but really ſhe diſcovers nothing in her Behaviour among us, that gives the leaſt Ground to be afraid of her *on any other Account.*

Mo: Has ſhe no Company that comes to her, or that ſhe goes abroad to?

Aunt, None at all, ſhe has not gone out of our Doors ſince ſhe came thither, nor has any Body come to her, that I know of, but your own Family; ſuch as your own Servants or Children.

Mo: Well then, Good Manners obliges her to do more with you, than Duty would do here, for when I told her that ſhe ſhould go no more to the Plays, nor viſit nor go to the Park a Sabbath Days, *ſhe told me to my Face,* ſhe would not be confined.

Aunt, I ſee nothing, but ſhe is very conformable with us.

Mo.

Mo: I pray God she may come to a Sight of her own Folly, when ever she humbles her self to G O D, I am very sure he will bring her to humble her self to her Father, for she treated him very Rudely and unbecoming, *what to do with her I know not*, she can never expect to come into her Father's Doors again, *but as a Penitent*, and that with very good Satisfaction of her being sincerely so.

Aunt I know the Substance of the Breach, but I never knew the last Part, I was going once or twice to talk of it to her, but I found it disordered her, and set her into a Fit of Crying, and I am unwilling to Discompose her.

Mo: Why Sister, you know the Story it self, and upon what the Difference began, (*viz.*) about restrainining her, and her Brother from going to the Park a Sabbath days, going to the Play, and reading Plays *and the like*, and you have heard how the first Sabbath-day after this Thing was debated among us, *when her Father began that happy Reformation in his Family, which blessed be G O D is strictly kept up to this Day*, she and her Brother contrived to go out of the Way, *we thought indeed* they had gone to the Park in Defiance of their Father, *and my heart aked I confess for them*, for their Father was so provoked at the thought of it, that he had resolved they should neither of them have ever come into his House again, till they had humbled themselves, and acknowledged *both their Sins against G O D*, and their Contempt of their Father, and had ordered all the Servants to keep them out if they came to the Gate, till they called him to them, but *happily*

ly for us all, they were it seems only walking *in the Lime-tree Walk* behindour Garden, and just as we were enquiring about it, they appeared walking *together* thro' the Garden entirely ignorant of what had passed, however their Father not fully satisfied, before they came in, went to them himself into the Garden, and strictly examined them about it: as they had the good Hap to satisfie their Father, that they had been no further than *the Lime trees*, so they satisfied themselves by seeing their Father in the greatest Rage they had ever known him in; *I say they satisfied themselves* of what they had to expect *if it had been otherwise*, and this put them upon reflecting what Course they had to take, where *Dear Sister* who can but observe, That in all their Consultations, G O D did not give them the Grace once to think of submitting themselves to their Father and conforming themselves to the most reasonable Desire that ever Father made to his Children, *(viz.) only to Restrain wicked Liberties and Company, and attend the Worship of G O D in the Family* but on the contrary, for five Weeks, that they stay'd at Home, *after that*, they never appeared at Prayer-time, but kept up, pretending either not to be well, or not dressed, or not up, and such like Excuses, till they were a Shame to the whole Family: And besides this, their Father observed, That notwithstanding his express Command, they went both of them twice to the Play-House the very same Week, as if on Purpose to insult him, and let him see, they valued not what he either said, or would say to them.

Aunt, That was very provoking indeed, *pray what said my Brother to it.*

Mo: If it had not been for me *Sister*, he had turned them both out of Door that very Week.

Aunt, Indeed I could not ha' blamed him if he had, *I think* he had done them but Justice.

Mo: I am sure he had done himself Justice *Sister*, but I considered their Good more than they did themselves, and that to have cast them entirely off, had been to precipitate their Ruin, and throw them into the very Mouth of all Manner of Temptation, and representing this to their Father, it convinced him *so far*, as not to proceed to that Extremity with them, but he had told them in so many Words by me, that since they had declined his Authority, he would decline their Conversation, that those that would not join with him in his Duty to G O D, should not enjoy with him the Bounty of G O D, and they that would not Kneel with him to Pray, should not sit with him to Eat, and so he flatly forbad them his Sight.

Aunt, I think he was very just in it, I wonder how it was possible they could behave so.

Mo: You may be sure it could not hold long thus, and at best it made a very melancholy Family among us, at last *my Son truly* came to his Father, and in few Words told him he was sorry he had disobliged him so much, but as he saw no Remedy, *he told his Father*, he came to ask his Consent to a Resolution he had taken to Travel: *His Father* said readily, there was no need for his Consent, if it was a Resolution, he suppos-

ed

ed he rather came to take his Leave of him, the fooliſh Boy *for tho he is a Man in Growth, he ſhewed the Boy and the Fool in his Behaviour*, told his Father he was reſolved to go, but had rather have his Conſent than not.

Aunt, He acted weakly in that and rudely too, pray how did *my Brother* take it.

Mo: Truly with more Compoſure than I could have expected, he told him that *as his Father* he could not but be ſorry to ſee him puſh on his own Ruin, but as it was his Duty to exerciſe the Authority of a Father, he not only refuſed to Conſent, but forbid him to go: and withal bid him remember what he had ſaid to him before, (*viz.*) That if he ſet his Foot out of his Houſe upon this Account, he ſhould never ſet his Foot in it again, but *as a Penitent*.

Aunt, What could he ſay to that?

Mo: Truly he ſaid little, but told his Father he was reſolved to go, and ſo withdrew. And the ſame Evening without acquainting me with it, or taking any further Leave, he went his Way.

Aunt, Went his Way *Siſter*, why whither did he go, I am ſure he is not gone Abroad now, for he has been ſeveral times at our Houſe to ſee his Siſter within this Week.

Mo: No he is not gone *yet*, we know that he has Lodgings at *Weſtminſter*, and Yeſterday he wrote his Father a Letter, pretending to beg his Pardon for going Abroad without his Conſent you know *Siſter* he has about 200 l. a Year, his Uncle . . . . left him, ſo he thinks himſelf his own Maſter.

Aunt

Aunt, Alas how long will that last for a foolish gay Fellow, that expects to make a Figure and look like a Gentleman Abroad.

Mo: Not long to be sure, I expect he will see his way through it very quickly.

Aunt, Why I hear he has bought a Commission, I suppose he has disposed of some of it already that Way.

Mo: It's very likely, but he acquaints me with nothing, I expect we shall hear of him again when it is all spent.

Aunt It may be so indeed.

Mo: Well if he may but come Home like the Prodigal, I shall not think that Estate ill lost, I shall be glad of his Poverty, for the sake of his Penitence.

Aunt, Well, and what said *my Niece* to all this?

Mo. Truly she kept her Chamber *as I told you* above a Month, and hardly ever was seen in the Family, I cannot imagine what Folly possest them both, she cried incessantly, Converst with no Body, would scarce speak if I came to her, at last she fell very Sick, *as well she might*, sure as I told her one Day, *no Girl was ever such a Mourner, for the loss of her wicked Pleasures*

Aunt Childhood and Youth are Vanity.

Mo. I took what care I could of her, and especially to remove the Discontents of her Mind, for we all believed she would Dy, I asked her if she would see her Father, nay her Father who I think verily Wept for her more than I did, would *believe* ha'been tempted to have broke his Re-

gulations, and ha' been reconciled to her, and would fain ha' been reconciled to see her, but when I did but Name him, she burst out into a fit of crying, and would not so much as hear of it, but *her Brother* her *Brother*, if her *Brother* might come again, she would see him: Well such was the Tenderness of her Father to her, *who most passionately loved her*, That he would ha' given Way to have her Brother come again, *but when he came to be told of it*, he insolently answered, he would not come unless his Father would send for him, this you may be sure was provoking: *nay Sister* it moved me so, *at them both*, that tho' he is my own Son, and my eldest, I care not if I never see him more, except in the Terms as above, and *as for her*, I committed her to GOD's Mercy, and concerned my self no more about her other than to take care she wanted nothing.

Aunt, I never heard the like in my Life, *pray what said my Brother.*

Mo: Truly he was not so provoked at it, as I thought he would ha' been, *that is* I mean it did not throw him into a Passion, he retired into his Closet, and in an Hour or two came down again composed in his Temper, but I could see *like that of Job*, his Grief was great; and indeed from that Time, I thought it my Duty rather to comfort my Husband than my Daughter while she continued ill, he was very uneasy, and impatient but when she recovered again, he was better satisfied; and thought less of her, our next Consideration was what was to be done with her, for our Family looks very odly, we had Authority quite turned up Side down among us, instead of

he

her Father refusing to be reconciled to her, *who had been the guilty Person and had provoked him to the utmost*, truly she pretends Resentmen, and refusing to be reconciled to her Father.

Aunt, It was strange usage *I confess*, I did not think she had been of such a Spirit.

Mo: When she was recovered, and was well enough to go abroad, instead of going to Church to give GOD Thanks for restoring her Health, she wanted to go to a young wild Companion of hers, *my Lady Lighthead*, and to go to the Play together: I could not bear the thoughts of this, with any Patience, but being not willing to disturb her Father with it. Because I knew it would exasperate him, I took upon me to tell her of my own Authority, *she should not go*, at which she said very smartly to me, *she had but one Request more to make me as long as she lived*, and what's that said I, *That you'll let me go to Service* says she very scornfully, *Dear Sister* you may judge how cutting this usage has been to me, who so dearly loved this Child, as that we distinguished her in our Affections from the rest of our Children, and that even to a Fault.

Aunt, That Kind of Love is generally so returned *Sister*, and Providence suffers it to be so a just Punishment, for an ill grounded and unequal dividing our Affections among our Children, *in which Case* we may read our Sin in our Punishment, but I pray what said you to her? I know not I confess what *I should* ha' done or said to it, I believe *I should* ha' been apt to ha' told her, That *her Petition was granted.*

Mo. If I had consulted my own Passions rather than her Welfare, I should ha' done so too, for I was not without Resentment enough, but I saw *Sister*, she was rash and foolish, and was not so willing to let her Ruin her self as she was to do it.

Aunt, But what did you say to her?

Mo. I told her, It was pity a Petition that had so much ingratitude in it to me, should not find Resentment enough in me *to Grant it*, however I would give her a Week to cool her thoughts in, and in that Time I would have her consider seriously of what she had desired, and if she would say then *calmly* and *deliberately*, That she desired it still, I would acquaint her Father with it, *and it should be granted*, only bade her remember the Condition which her Father had made with her Brother, (*viz.*) That if ever he set his Foot out of the House in the Quarrel, he should never have Leave to set his Foot in it again, *but as a Penitent*, and she might depend upon it. Both her Father and I too, *would make the same Condition with her at parting*: And so I left her to consider it.

Aunt, I suppose she was wiser when she had thought of it.

Mo. Yes, about 3 or 4 Days after she asked me, If I would give her Leave to go to her Aunts meaning your House, I told her *yes*, I would consent to that, *if her Father would agree to it*, so as her Request I asked her Father to let her come to your House, and he was willing enough, in hopes your Family would enure and acquaint her with good Things, but he would not Consent till she had

had promised solemnly, That she would keep no Company, nor go to any Plays, or bring printed Plays home to your House, and she promised *she would not.* So we sent her to you, but I dare say she will not keep her Word.

Aunt, Well, she is very welcome to my House, and I assure you *as I said before,* she carries her self very modestly, and handsomly among us.

Mo. Nay, she is of a very good Temper, and an obliging Carriage enough, she wants neither Wit, nor Manners; She wants nothing *Sister* but G O D 'S Grace.

Aunt, All our Children loves her Company extremly, and *some of them,* more than I have told you yet.

Mo: And do you think she has kept her Promise with us, about Plays and my Lady.

Aunt, I dare say she has, *as I said before,* for we see no Body come near her, but her Brother sometimes, and she tells us in Compliment, She is exceedingly diverted with the Company of my Daughters: So that she has quite left off all Conversation.

Mo. And does she Conform to your Family Orders, Sister, and appear at Family Worship, Constantly.

Aunt, Indeed *Sister* she must do it in our House or we would not keep her there; *nay,* neither would any of our Children keep her Company, or endure her, *if she did not,* for I thank G O D, we have no Contemners of Religion among us: but I must do *my Niece* that Justice, That I never perceived the least Reluctancy in her, to any thing

thing that was good in my Life, *I mean at our House*, nay *Sister* we have a mighty Opinion of her being very sober, and you will say so too, when I tell you really what I came hither about at this Time.

Mo: What is that *Sister*?

Aunt, Why I am come to ask her of you, and my Brother, for my Son.

Mo. Dear Sister, We are but in a sorry Circumstance *as to her* to be jested with your Son a pretty Youth, and GOD may give her more Grace *by that Time she is fit for a Wife*, if she is fit to deserve him, you might be sure we should not be against it, but their Age would be unequal, and they are very near a Kin *Sister* besides those Things, are remote, I have no Heart to talk of of marrying her, I dare not wish any Family *that I have a value for*, to venture upon her.

Aunt, You quite mistake me *Sister*, it is not my own Son, *that I mean*, but *my Son in Law*, my Husband's Son, I assure you, *I am not in Jest*.

Mo: I am surprized to hear you Talk so, *Sister*.

Aunt, Well do not be surprized, I must Talk with you about it, *in earnest*.

Mo. Dear Sister, Do not entertain such a Thought, I am sure I can never agree to it, for your Sake, you will but injure your own Peace, and my Brother *your Husband* will think, you and we are Confederate to draw him in, besides you know he has a good Estate settled upon him, and as for this Girl, she has so disobliged her Father, I cannot in Conscience desire him *to do any*

Thing

Thing for her, especially while she is in this State of Obstinacy, and Rebellion: how can it be expected. Therefore if you love your own *Family Peace*, I would advise you seriously, *do not think of such a Thing*, besides *Sister*, your Son in Law is a sober virtuous religious Gentleman, *you see* what a mad desperate furious Spirit *this Girl is of*, a profest Enemy to all that is Good, *one that* is broke from her Father, meerly because he would Reform her, you cannot in Conscience propose such a Match to a Gentleman that deserves so well, I would not have a Hand in making him so miserable for the World.

Aunt, *Sister*, *Sister*, You speak very honestly, and like your self, but you quite mistake the Case, you take this for a Project of my own, to Advance your Daughter and oblige you, and my own Family, but you are quite wrong, the young Gentleman has made the Motion to his Father, and his Father to me, so that *I only come of the Errand*, 'tis all Matter of their own Choice, the young Man first, and the Father Consenting at his Request.

Mo: I am amazed at it, do they know the Breach that has been among us.

Aunt, *Yes*, every Word of it.

Mo. Dear Sister, do not deceive me, I will never give my Consent so much as to speak a Word farther about it, *unless they are told the worst of it all*; for I will be no Cheat, they shall never say they were deceived by me, tho it be for my own Daughter.

Aunt Indeed Sister, I have not deceived them, for I talk't with my Son in Law two Hours, and told

told him every Word I knew of it all, *neither could it be hide*, for every one in our Family knows it. She does not deny it her self

Aunt, as I told you, She always breaks out into Tears, and we don't care to grieve her so, we forbear it as much as possible, but she knows that we all know of it, besides you will be satisfied by a Reason you shall hear presently, That she has some Sense of her Circumstances, for that when we have talk't to her of Marrying, and named *such* a one, or *such* another, she'l say to us, *why do we talk to her* of marrying, That has *no Fortune*, and that *her Father will give her nothing*. That *she never expects he will be reconciled* to her again, or do any Thing for her, *and the like*, and then it always ends in Tears, and that makes us break off the Story.

Mo. Upon what Foundation then *Sister*, can this Propoſal be made to her Father, for it is certain, That tho' no Family could be more agreeable to us, than yours, yet it cannot be expected he should hear any Thing in it, until she comes and humbles her self, and acknowledges her Fault. no Body can propose it to him before upon any reasonable Foundation: She cannot expect her Father should seek her again, who did it so unexpectedly before, and was rejected with such Abominable insolvence, when she did not know too, but she was upon the Brink of the Grave.

Aunt, I confess, That is a hard Case, and I know not what to say to it.

Mo. Besides Sister, I cannot think the young Man would be so mad to think any more of her.

he knew all I have told you about her to Day, nd I am resolved *if he will have her*, nothing all be hid from him that Justice requires should e told.

A. Indeed Sister I have been as faithful to him as ou can be, except only what you told me just ow, he does not at all justify her Conduct, *but ys*, he believes she has other Principles now, d if my Brother will give his Consent to let him ve her, *he says* he will come and ask his Par- n for her.

Mo. My Husband is above in his Closet, if you ease *I'll call him*, and hear what he says.

Aunt, With all my Heart.

(*She sends a Servant to call her Husband and he comes immediately.*

Mo. My dear, here's an odd piece of News to told you.

Hus. No good I doubted, assoon as I saw who s the Messenger, ; *well Sister* let us know it wever, *let it be as bad as it will*, what mad thing my Daughter done at your House.

Mo. When *we fear evil* we always believe it, your rs push you too fast *my dear.*

Hus. In the ordinary Course of G O D 'S Pro- ence, I can expect no good to befal her, she is nifestly under the judicial Hand of G O D, dned to incur his Curse, and to be a Curse to Parents.

Aunt, G O D 'S Ways are unsearchable, etimes our Fall are made the first Step to our

Recovery, and the very particular Sins that w
commit, are the Introduction to our Deliveranc
from the Dominion of Sin in general, therefor
we can not conclude our selves Reprobate or an
Body else, till we see them past the Reach of S
vereign Grace.

Hus. I wish as heartily for her, as any one ca
do, that she may repent; but I cannot say th
I expect it, she has gone a dreadful Length *for on*
of her Age,

Aunt, She may yet be a happy Convert *for a*
that, we have Instances of *worse than her*, th
have died Martyrs for him, whose Name the
had blasphemed.

Hus. If ever she returns, her Repentance mu
be very bitter.

Aunt, He that gives Repentance always, Pr
portioneth the Degrees of it.

Hus. But what is this Account you have to gi
me, I doubt there is nothing of Repentance
it, I expect rather to hear she is ruined.

Mo. No no my Dear, thank G O D there
no bad News of her, I had the same Fears f
her, not doubting but her Brother and she h
pursued their usual Trade of Company, and t
Play house, but *my Sister* assures me of the co
trary.

Aunt, *Indeed Brother*, I would ha' been ve
faithful to you *if it had been so*, I would n
have hid it from you, besides I should not have
her stay'd in my House, *but my News is qu*
of another Kind, Sister *pray tell it to my Br*
ther.

T

The Mother tells the whole Story as is before related.

Fa. You are all mad.

Aunt, What do you mean by mad? *you must explain your self*, or we shall think you are so.

Hus. I cannot but think you all mad, to go to ruin a Gentleman at once, *I'll have no Hand in wicked a Thing.*

Aunt, I have no more ado, than to carry your answer.

Hus. I have more Respect for him *I assure you*, and should think the worst Action that ever I did in my Life, if I should be Instrumental to bring such a young Man as he is into such a Snare, I cannot do a Thing so dishonourable.

Aunt, Why, What do you take your Daughter to be?

Hus. A Contemner of G O D, a Dispiser of Religion! a Rebel to her Father! given over to Vanity, and obstinate *in all*! These I have by sad Experience found in her, what other Evils these may produce, *G O D only knows*, I should be sorry my Cousin . . . . . should know by Experience; nor can I be unjust to Consent to his joining himself to one of my Children, who having no Sense of *Filiall Relation*, can have little or none of a *Social Relation*; one that can be ungrateful to her Father, and insolent to a tender Mother, can never suitably return the Kindness of an obliging Husband.

Aunt, He knows the whole Case, and all that

you would have him know, *I shall honestly tell him*, for I will no more Deceive him, than you would.

Hus. Does he know that she is now in actual Rebellion against GOD, and in Defyance of her Father and Mother, and that she has laid me under an absolute necessity of having nothing at all to do with her, or with him when he shall have taken her?

Aunt, Yes, He knows all that.

Fa. And what says he *to it*?

Aunt, he says, He will come and ask you Forgiveness for her.

Fa. Repentance is never done by Proxy *Sister* a true Penitent is never backward to come himself.

Aunt Why, it is true *as he says*, That for her to come now and submit her self, is only sending her home to Cry for a Husband, or making her appear a Penitent for a Portion. He desires your Consent that he shall Marry your Daughter, and leaves all the rest to you.

Fa. I can have no Concern with her, nor *Assent* or *Dissent* to *or* from any Thing that concerns her, any more than if she was no Relation to me till she returns to her Duty, and appears truly and sincerely Penitent for her Crime, She knows I am obliged to Act so, and I think I owe so much to GOD, to Religion, and to the Duty of a Parent.

Aunt, You will not however force her Repentance *Brother*, I believe she is sensible she is wrong and I can see it plain enough, but you know Bro-

ther

ther, *Repentance is the Gift of GOD*, only, I dare say your Daughter would be glad to ask you Pardon, and the Affectionate Concern she speaks of it with, *makes me think so*; but to say she shall be a true Penitent towards GOD for her Offence against him, neither *you* or *I*, or *any Body alive* can Answer for that, would you be willing I should bring her to acknowledge her Offence against you.

Fa. Sister, I would have no Solicitor in such a Case, when her Repentance is sincere, GOD will bring her upon her Knees to him, and then she will soon come to me also, and that is the way I desire to have her brought.

Aunt Well, I am perswaded the sooner she marries my Son in Law, the sooner she will be brought to Repentance, I am satisfied, he will be no hindrance to her in the way of her Duty.

Fa. Nor she any forwarding to him in the Way of his Duty; *Alas!* what a Family will there be among them! *how will she* the Mistress of a Family *comply* to set up the Worship of GOD in her House, that left her Father's House because she would not submit to serve GOD there, how shall she instruct her Children? That would bear no Instruction her self? and ridicul'd it in her Brothers and Sisters, who were better inclin'd? If he is told all this faithfully and sincerely, I know he is a Religious Sober Gentleman, and he can never so far forget himself as to think any more of such a Woman's being his Wife.

Aunt, You are very hard to be *wooed* me thinks.

Fa. My Difficulties are juſt and honourable, it ſhall never be ſaid, That I firſt turned my Daughter out of Doors, and then let him Marry her, *it is In juſtice* to him, that I ſay all this, had ſhe been deſerving and dutiful, and were I not ſatisfied in my Conſcience, ſhe will be his Ruin, I ſhould not have ſaid ſo much, nor made the leaſt Objection to the Propoſal.

Aunt, If I had come of this Meſſage before my Niece had diſobliged you, I believe you had thought it a very good Settlement for your Daughter.

Fa. Had it been before ſhe had diſcovered her ſelf to be what I think will Ruin and Deſtroy him, I mean as to the happineſs of a Relation, I acknowledge, I ſhould have thought very well of it, and now I refuſe it only, as I think ſhe is not fit to make him a Wife.

Aunt, But *if we will venture*, you will not oppoſe it.

Fa. What mean ye by *we*, if the young Man and his Father both are told what I ſay, *and that I ſay it*, or will give me Leave to tell it them my ſelf, and will venture after that, *I have no more to ſay*, but as I ſaid firſt, *I will have no Hand in it*, I can have nothing to ſay to her about her till ſhe alters her Behaviour. She is you know out of my Hands.

Aunt, Well, I have no more to ſay, but *I believe* we ſhall make a Wedding of it among us, and perhaps ſhe may be brought to her Duty afterwards, your Negative is not againſt *her* being marrird *to him*, but againſt *his* being married *to her*,

her, which if they will venture, we reckon we have your Consent as far as you can give it.

Fa. I will have no Blame if she proves all that's wicked to him.

Aunt, I'll clear you of that effectually, I hope she may be yet a good Woman and make him a good Wife.

Fa. He runs more Risque than a Granadier in storming a Counterscarp.

Mo. The Grace of GOD *may* Reclaim her, I Grant it: tho' we see but small hopes of it. *However Sister*, I engage you upon your Word, to give a faithful Account both to your Son and to his Father, of all I have told you, of her Conduct, how she has treated her Parents, and how it may be expected she will treat her Husband, and if after being thus fairly warned by us, *you will all venture*, we are honourably discharged, you see we have no Objection on your Son's Account, do as you please, only let it be acknowledged, That we have hid nothing from you.

NOTES

NOTES on the First

DIALOGUE.

THE Length of this Discourse might be perhaps thought needless, if it did not nearly concern us all to know the Duty and Obligation of religious Parents, in the disposing their Children, (*viz.*) *to be plain and open*, in case of such Matches, where their own Children are openly guilty of such Crimes, which may be ruinous to the Persons who apply to them for Marriage.

Not that the Parents of a Child are obliged to expose the Faults, Errors, and trivial Mistakes of their Children, or even the bad Tempers or ill Dispositions of their Children, so to Frighten or Divert those who might otherwise choose them for *Husbands*, *or Wives*, but when the Case is Capital, *the Duty of a Parent alters*, for Justice is due from the Parent, as well as to the Stranger,

ranger, as to his own Child, otherwise the Pa-
nt is guilty of the Cheat or Abuse put upon
e Person *for Example.*

If a Man's Daughter has been a Whore, has a
stard or an ill Disease, and a Person who he be-
ves to be an honest Man, applies to him to give
s Consent to let him marry his Daughter, and
mes upon an honourable treaty with him: altho
: might lawfully Conceal her Shame, *as not be-
g obliged to expose his own Child*, yet in such a
ase he is bound in Honour and Conscience either
solutely to refuse his Consent to the Marriage,
ndthat he may do without giving his Reasons for
) or if he does give his Consent, then fairly to
arn the Person by discovering to him the Cir-
mstance of his Daughter, and if the Party will
nture upon her *after he is so fairly warned and
formed*, then the Parent is not obliged to refuse
s Consent.

He that marries his Daughter to an honest Man
on a Supposition of her being a Virgin, and he
e *Father* knowing at the same Time she has been
Whore, is a notorious Cheat, and is guilty of
e Fraud entirely, even more than his Daugh
r, because she is not obliged to accuse her self.

The Father and Mother of this young Woman
e solicited for a Marriage to their Daughter
om a Relation, and one they have no Objection
ainst, but are both of them conscientiously nice,
d careful of discharging themselves faithfully
the young Gentleman, rather over loading
eir Daughter's Character, than leaving the least
oom to have it said *in Case of a miscarriage*,
hat they had imposed upon them.

In the Discourse between the Mother and th Aunt, some useful Observations may be made.

1 The Mother's Christian Consideration i mediating with the Father, when the Son an Daughter provoked him so exceedingly, th to cast them entirly off, had been to precip tate their Ruin. This is a G O D lil proceeding, Parents should always consid the impending Ruin of their Children, a not consult their own Passions, when the Children offend them, least they cast the into the Mouth of Destruction, not t Justice of the Resentment, but the Souls our Children should be our Concern ; a we should consider if G O D should tre us all as we deserve, or should proceed Judgment upon the grossest Provocation, should *even the best of us* be undone.

2 Observe the powerful Influence of a F ther's Affections, in this Father's Behavio to his Daughter when Sick, and how the ju Resentments of her former Carriage, cou not maintain their Ground in his Mind, gainst the Return of his Tenderness for l Child, but he would have laid aside his A ger : nay he would have received his S upon her Account, and to have comfort her, and reconciled his Daughter ; This a lively Representation, to us, *tho' infinit mean in the Comparision* of the Paternal go ness of G O D, who notwithstanding o repeated Provocations, and Rebellion, co tinn

tinues to extend the Sceptre of Peace, calling on the Sons of Men, to embrace their own Happineſs.

3 The ungrateful Inſolence both of Son and Daughter here, is aſtoniſhing! and the Father's and Mother's caſting off all Anxieties for them, after it, muſt be allowed not only to be juſtifyable, but to be their Duty, but the Father's Conduct is very Examplar, and I cannot but recommend it to all Parents, (*viz.*) not to fly out in a Rage, which is but *acting our ſelves*, and venting our Affections at the ſink of our Paſſions, but like a Chriſtian he look't up, he retired to his Cloſet, there ſpreading the Caſe before the L O R D, looking at it, as all of his Permiſſion and Appointment; and as a Diſeaſe which G O D only could Cure, and the Conſequence was eſpecially remarkable, *he came down perfectly Compoſed.* Would Chriſtians in all their Griefs, or when they are moſt juſtly provoked by their Relations or others, purſue this Method, rather than give a looſe to the Violence of their Paſſions, many Indecencies, many unbounded Excurſions, and ſinful ſcandalous Exceſſes of Paſſion would be avoided, and the Mind, would be kept Calm, and compoſed under the greateſt Preſſures.

4 Obſerve here the Aunt gives a juſt Hint to the Mother of the Miſchief of Parents diſtinguiſhing unequally their Affections to their Children, and that generally ſpeaking thoſe Children who they ſo partially

Love, are, *whether in Judgment from GOD or* as the Consequence of that Partiality made their greatest Afflictions, this is *no Question* an Error in Education, and the Miscarriage of these Children, may well be looked on as a Judgment of GOD: but it would be well for Parents to consider, *and this is the End of my observing it*, how that Partiality of Affection is really *the Cause* of the Miscarriages of their Children, as it is constantly attended with an indulging their Humours and Follies, and neglecting the most necessary Parts of Education, such as Instruction, Discipline, and Correction.

But I return to the Discourse about the Marriage

Religious Parents ought to be more especially very careful in the matching those Children, and that they use no indirect Arts to draw Persons in to seek their Children in Marriage, nor on any Account Deceive or Delude them, for three Reasons.

1. Because of the Immorrality and Dishoneſt of it *as above*.
2. To avoid just Reproaches on the Profession of Religion.
3. To prevent their Children being ill used on that Account afterwards, many sad Family Breaches being the Effect of the want of such a Caution.

Observe *the Aunt* is not brought in here as resolving to let the Match go on without the Consent of the young Lady's Father, and Mother; but as she takes it for granted, That they have no

Objectio

Objection againſt the Match, other than their own Daughter who had ſo ill diſcharged her Duty to them, and had broken with them upon ſo unjuſt an Account, ſhould ſhew the like Obſtinacy in her new Relation *as a Wife*; and lay a Foundation of Diſcord and Miſchief in her Family; to the Ruin of the young Gentleman, who they knew to be not Religiouſly educated only, but ſoberly and religiouſly inclined alſo.

Upon this Foundation it was, That the Aunt took their Diſcourſe to be a full Aſſent to the Marriage, which accordingly was brought to an Iſſue, and it is to be underſtood, That tho' the Dialogue between the Aunt, *and the Father and Mother of the young Woman*, is brought to this Part, which rather belongs to the former, *this third Part being a Relation of things which muſt be placed two or three Years after*, yet as we are to ſpeak of this young Lady now, in things acted by her after her Marriage, and of her Conduct as a Wife, the Circumſtances which introduced the Marriage could not be properly ſpoken of, before, and are introduced here as a Hiſtory of Things paſt, and ſo this Part conſiſts of two Pieces, alſo; Things acted before the Marriage, and Things after it.

Here I muſt obſerve, the Danger and Inconveniencies that attend Marriages, when Wives and Husbands either are of different Opinions in Religion, or have no Religion *at all*.

By *no Religion at all*, I am not to be underſtood to mean Athieſts and abſolute Oppoſers of the Name and Being of Religion; but as we underſtand the Word, and as we actually ſay ſuch an one

has *no Religion at all*, that is they are *not religi ous, or religiously inclined, or religiously instruct ed.*

The young Gentleman here ventured hard in deed, and ran such a Risque in doing it, as would never recommend to one for their Practis and tho' for other Ends such as to magnify th Grace of GOD in the Conversion of this ob stinate Woman, and to lay an Example of th Duty of an Husband to such a Wife, *when h has the disaster to have her.* I have given th History of this Match, *which tho' ill founded*, issue well, it must be acknowledged, That the Da ger is too great, and too many Families are ruine by the like, *to one that comes to such a hap Conclusion as this did*, That I hope there can no Encouragement at all given from this one E ample.

On the other Hand, *when it does so happen*, a when contrary to Advice or to the Terror Examples, of miscarrying Families, *it does so f out*, That a religious Man, or a virtuous or ous Woman is matcht with an irreligious, loo or profane Wife, or Husband; which m first or last be very affecting, and melancholy to such, *since such there will always be*, t Conduct of this young Gentlewoman will both instructing and encourageing: There no doubt Duty's peculiarly incumbent on su Husbands and Wives.

It is plain from the Scripture the Wickedn or irreligious Practice of either, do by Means justify their parting, or dissolve t Marriage Contract. The Duty then of t religi

ligious Husband or Wife is by all the ſoft ntle Methods poſſible, by Entreaties, Impor- nities, Inſtruction, Exhortation, praying ith, and for their Wives, but above all, by religious Example to win, bring over and erſwade them, *if poſſible*, to Embrace the Truth, ie Knowledge of G O D, and the Ways of ie Goſpel. 1. *Corthians*, 7. 16. *But what noweſt thou O Wife, whether thou ſhalt ſave y Husband. Or how knoweſt thou O Man, hether thou ſhalt ſave thy Wife?*

To encourage either Husbands or Wives to his great duty by the Example and Succeſs of ne good young Man *we are talking of*, is the rea- on of this Relation. But before it proceeds, ve muſt give an Account of another Parley be- ween the Brother and Siſter, a little before his oing to Travel.

The End of the firſt Dialogue.

The Second

DIALOGUE.

AS in the former dialogue when the Aunt came to Treat of a Marriage for the daughter, we had of Course the Mother telling us the History of the last Part of the Conduct of her Son and daughter, *after their coming home from the Garden from their Walk under the Lime Trees*, to the Time that both of them *so rudely* left their Father, so in this Dialogue which is between the *Brother* and *Sister*, we shall from their own mouths, have an Account of the Measures they both took afterwards, *first as to her Part*, till just before she went to be married, and secondly as to his Part till just before he went into the Army, and to his Travels *as he call'd them* what became of both afterwards, we shall see in a Part by it self.

The Brother being preparing for his Journey or Voyage, and the Sister for her Wedding they mutually desired to Converse together about those Things before they went on, and the Brother

ther making his Sister a visit at her Aunts, their first Conversation produces the following Dialogue.

The Sister begins *with a Sigh.*

Sister, *Well Brother*, What is to become of us two? methinks we are two odd People in this World.

Bro: Truly so we are, we look like two Exiles or People rather gone into voluntary Banishment from their own Country.

Sister, I'll tell you: I have thought rather we are like two Malcontent Courtiers, who being justly disgusted at the Treatment they have received, *have left the Court*, and desire to retire *as they call it* into the Country.

Brother, I think so too, and I believe it is with them *as it is with Us*, or with me at least, that they generally Wish they had not done it afterwards.

Sister. Why do you repent then?

Bro: I don't say I repent, I think I have been ill Used, and that I gave no Reason for such Violent Treatment; but I cannot say I am glad it has happened; there are many Things which make my present Condition less pleasant to me, than it was before.

Sister. Well, *if you repent*, why don't you go Home as the Prodigal did? No doubt the old Man would kill the Fatted Calf to have you again.

Bro: *Ay*, but I an't come to Feeding of Hogs yet, and Eating of Husks; I don't know what I might do if it were come to that.

Sister,

Sister. *Nor never will* I hope, there's no danger of that Brother.

Bro. I hope not, *yet I must needs say*, even since I have fixed my self for my Travels, my heart has been very heavy, and I dream every Night *the strangest things!*

Sister. What need you be so concerned? you have a good Estate of your own, you are as well as if you were at Home.

Brother. No *not so well neither*, for *to go back to your Court simily* the discontented Courtier retires to his Estate in the Country, and *there* he can live very well *but still* five or six Thousands Pounds a Year at Court, made a very good Addition, and made him a great deal better; so that he is always a Loser by quiting his Post, *and so it is with me Sister*: If I had stayed with my Father, or gone Abroad with his Consent, I had been Subsisted at his Expences, or perhaps Traveled at his Charge, and then my own Estate would have Encreased, besides my Father sure *would not ha' Disinherited me for no Crime, but meerly having a Little Estate of my own*: But now I suppose he has done with me entirely, and what's my Estate compared to living like a Gentleman?

Sister. I did not think you had been troubled with the Hyppo *Brother*; *of all Things*, why, you are quite cast down: I never saw the like of you. What must *I say* then, if you talk thus; *I that have nothing at All* but am kept here of Charity.

Brother. No, I han't the Hyppo, I am not cast down, but I tell you what Thoughts I have sometimes.

Sister

Sister. Yes, *and Dreams too* you say, what do they come from but from the Hyppo? I believe you have got the Vapours, pray what did you Dream?

Bro. I Dream a Thousand Things not worth nameing, but however one Dream was so Particular, I cannot but tell it you, tho' perhaps you'll Banter me for it too, but I'll tell it you, because you were a little concerned in it, and Acted a Part in it.

Sister. Pray what was it?

Bro. Why you know I suppose, That I have bought me a Commission.

Sister. I know *You* said you Intended it, but I did not know you had done it, I would not ha' had you done That, methinks I would not ha' had you been a Souldier, on many Accounts, what need have you to go into the Army to be knock't in the Head?

Bro. Well *that is not the Case now*, we'll talk of that another Time; *I have done it.*

Sister. But what's that to your Dream?

Bro: Why, the same Night that I had bought my Commission, I had this *ugly dream*: It seemed to me, that I had been some Time in the Army, and had met with many Wounds and Misfortunes; But at last I had one of my Arms Shot off, and had been a long while under Cure and Sick, so that I was reduced to a meer Skeleton.

Sister. All *Hyppo*! *all Hyppo*! it is nothing in the World else.

Bro: Well, but this was not all, for I was reduced

duced to such mean Circumstances, and so Poor, that I had not necessaries; and was in the miserablest Condition that ever you heard of; and after Suffering a great many Hardships, I wrote to my Father to relieve me, and he ....

Sister. Refused! *I warrant that!* I kno' it's like him.

Bro: *NO, NO,* he did not do so neither *you run too fast,* he sent me Money enough to bring me over to *England,* and I was brought in a Coach to his Door, but he would not let me be brought in, but Ordered me to be carried to a Neighbours House, where *after an ordinary manner* I was taken Care of, and supplyed with necessarys, *tho' meanly enough,* and this Part of it put me into the greatest Passion, that I thought if any thing had been in my Way, I would have Murdered my self.

Sister. It was very Barbarous Usage indeed! *the more like the rest of his doings with us both,* but where's the Part I was to Act in this Melancholly Scene.

Bro: Why, *Good* and *Generous* like your self, *you* no sooner heard of my Condition, but you came to Visit me.

Sister. And *what could I do,* what Condition was I in to help you? was I reconciled to my Father? *If you thought so,* I believe your Dream will never come to pass.

Bro: Yes, yes, You were Married, kept your Coach, and Lived gallantly, and you came to me very Chearful and Gay, but very Grave in your Carriage, you told me you were very Sorry for my Condition, but you were sensible we had both been

been in the Wrong, and had pulled down the heavy Judgment of GOD upon me, by our Disobedient Carriage to our Father.

Sister. Could *I be* such a Brute!

Bro: Nay you spoke kindly enough to me other wise, and gave me a handful of Gold for my supply; but talked mighty Religiously to me, about our Usage of my Father.

Sister. It's a Sign it was a Dream; Religion and *a great deal of Gold*! it's all a Dream, I shall never have much of either of them: But go on:

Bro. I askt you why my Father carried it so Severe to me *Now*, when he saw me in that Condition; *you said* I might Remember my Father had Solemnly Vowed; that if I went away I should never set my Foot in his doors again, but as a Penitent; and unless he was Satisfied that I acknowledged my Error I could not expect he would break those Engagements; nor would he see me, till he had an Answer to it in positive Terms; *I asked you* how then he came to be Reconciled to you, *for his Resentment was equal to us both*, and we were both in the same Fact.

Sister. Ay, and what said I to this?

Bro: You told me with Tears, That you were not ashamed to say, you had heartily repented of it, and had asked Forgiveness of God, and your Father a Thousand Times: That you were sensible we had both Offended God, and Abused the Tenderness of the Best of Fathers, and you never had done an Action which gave you so much Peace in your Life, as when you came upon your Knees

Knees to my Father, and begged his Pardon in the Face of all the Family; and if I had any sence of Religion, or of Natural duty, *you hoped* I would do so too, and that you came on purpose to perswade me to it.

Sister. This is *not a dream only*, *But* a dream that I am sure will never come to pass, at least my Part in it, and I hope yours will not neither: *is there any more of it?*

Bro: You said a great deal more to the same Purpose, that I cannot repeat.

Sister, I hope you minded none of it.

Bro. I cannot say, That has made no Impressions upon me, in Spight of all my Opposition to it, for I hate to give Way to such Things.

Sister, How did it end, did you submit?

Bro: I do not remember either that I submited, or that my Father did any Thing for me, remember this, tho' that your Arguments did not move me *much*, and your Example less: I could not see much Reason for Penitence, and I could not be Hypocrite enough to Counterfeit it; and I bad you tell my Father, *If I had offended him I was very sorry, and asked his Pardon.* But you told me you feared that would not be sufficient, you went away, and I remained as miserable as I was before; *till I awaked*, and was very glad it was but a dream.

Sister, dear Brother, I don't value dreams and *of all dreams*, such a wild one as this, which I am satisfied can never come to pass, but I'll tell you what use I'll make of it, and that is to desire you to make it impossible to come to pass.

Bro: How's that?

Sis

Sister, By resolving not to go into the Army.

Bro. That cannot be now.

Sister That's as much as to say, *there is a Fate upon you*, and you *must go* by the same Rule of fatal Necessity, *which some People harp much upon*, all your dream may be under a Necessity of coming to pass.

Bro: *It may be so*, for ought I know.

Sister, You give me the Vapours with but thinking of it.

Bro: *What can I do*, how can I help it now?

Sister, *Why*, I tell you how you may help it, *do not go.*

Bro. I tell you, I have bought a Troop of *Dragoons.*

Sister, *What then*, you may sell it again.

Bro: That is not Honourable, I should be Laugh't at.

Sister, You have no Occasion in the World to do so, you have an Estate, and may live happily, and settle your Mind, what may come this Way, no body can tell; the other Way you were out of danger, this Way your dream may come good for ought I know.

Bro: Now *you* have got the Hippo *Sister.*

Sister, Why, *such a Dream*, and *such a Circumstance*, is enough to give any body the Vapours, I cannot think of your going to be murdered in the Army, if it had been my Lot, and I had been a Man, there had been some Sense in it.

(*She Weeps.*

Bro:

Bro. Why you any more than me.

Sister, Why, because you have an Estate, *as I told you before*, I have nothing at all, but am turned out of my Father's House, and am kept here in Charity, *as it were.*

Bro: Charity, why I hear you are going to be married.

Sister, Married, Who do you think will have me without any Portion ?

Bro: Why I hear young Mr..... my Aunt's Son in Law *Courts you.*

Sister, There has been something about it indeed, but that was as *I suppose*, if this Breach had not happened *as it has*, he knows better than to take me, *and if it had not*, I should ha' known better than to have had him.

Bro: Why, *as to the last*, I think you were wrong, he is a very pretty Gentleman, and has a very good Estate : and you have been acquainted with his Humour, *you know he is a sober sensible Man*

Sister, *Ay Brother*, but you know *Sir Anthony.*

Bro. But you know *Sister* on the other Hand, Sir Anthony's Character was so bad, and his Estate but indifferent, and entangled too ; So that you had no room to think, *That my Father tho you and he had not differed*, would ever have been brought to like it, *nor would he ha been in the Right if he had* ; for Sir Anthony could have made you no Settlement, and besides he is a Rake, I wonder you could fancy him.

Sister, *Well all that's over now*, I am a fitter Match

latch for my Uncle's Coachman, than for my ncle's eldest Son.

Bro. That's all Hippo too Sister, prithee as free with me, as I am with you, and tell e that Case, *I know something of it*, I know you ay have him if you will, notwithstanding all our Circumstances; as for the Family Quarrel knows of it, and yet he is so in love with you, ll take you whether you have any Portion or no, d venture reconciling your Father afterwards, *think he offers fair.*

Sister, Indeed he said so to me, which was very bliging, *I confess.*

Bro: What could you say to him in Re- rn.

Sister, I told him I would not do him so much arm, I was too much his Friend.

Bro. That was a mock Friendship, and what did not thank you for *I suppose*, what else uld you say.

Sister, I told him *very plainly*, I would not be much in Debt to any Husband, as to have him e me without a Portion, nor I would not put into a Husband's Power to *R*eproach me with ving had nothing with me.

Bro: *Come tell me the whole discourse now*, I ow you was able to keep him at Arms, and a eat while with your Tongue.

Sister, You are mistaken in me, *and more in n*, I assure you.

Bro: *Go on*, and tell me the utmost Opposition u could make of that Kind.

Sister, *No*, as you served me about your

dreams, *so I'll do now with you*, I won't Troub
you with those single Banters, which were of
Use, but I'll tell you the main debate, becau
you are a little concerned in it too, *as I was*
your dream.

Bro: With all my Heart.

Sister, Why after he had two or three Tim
proposed Marriage to me, and my Aunt h
pressed me to a serious Consideration of it, I too
the Liberty to speak my Mind very freely to hi
one Night, and to her too, *in short*, I made m
Aunt downright Angry with me, but I could g
nothing from him, but what I confess was kinde
than *as I told him*, I ever intended to deserve, ar
what was so very obliging, That I confess I thin
my self very rude to him, *I wonder he cou*
bear it.

Bro: I know he is a most obliging good h
moured Gentleman, and you ought not to hav
used him ill.

Sister, *Well*, I used him ill enough for all tha
I asked him first, if he knew the Occasion of m
being at their House, *he said* yes he did: *I tol*
him, I did not believe it.

Bro: That was rude of it self:

Sister, *No*, I was not rude that Way neithe
I did not give him the Lye, but I went on *imm*
diately, I told him, That he might perhaps know
that it was a Breach between my Father and me
but did not suppose *as I did*, That it was a Breac
that was impossible ever to be made up; *h*
look't a little surprized at that, and said nothing

bu

ut my Aunt took me up short, and said, *don't ay so Niece, I hope it shall easily be made up*, No Madam *said I*, it can never be made up, I thought ou all went upon a wrong Notion, and there- re it was that *I said*, I did not believe it, when Mr. . . . . said he knew the Affair of the reach.

Bro. But why would you lay it down *so positivly*, hat it could never be made up.

Sister, *Why* I told them plainly, my Father ought me guilty of an unpardonable Fault, d I thought my self guilty of no Fault at all, y Father thought me *disobedient*, and I thought m *unnatural*: My Father had vowed never to ceive me without Repentance, and I had re- lved never to repent, and so it was impossible e could be reconciled.

Bro: That was laying it down *very plainly* indeed; hat could they say?

Sister, My Aunt was very warm with me, and deed I thought she would ha' been downright gry at my saying *I would never Repent.* She dged I ought not to say so in any Case whatso- er, *I was as warm as she, and told her*, if I was nvinc'd I was in the Wrong, I should repent of urse, of that or any Thing else: *if I was* , I could never repent by Violence, that Fa- rs might Sin against Children, as well as ildren against Parents, I would ha' said more, I broke out into Tears, and could not lk.

Bro: *You were too warm*, you would ha' argued

it better if you had been calmer.

Sister, She moved me, by seeming to condemn m as I thought without Arguing, but when she saw me concerned, she said she was sorry to see thing come to such a Height, and that if it was so, sh was almost of my Mind, *that it would never l made up*, and added *what vexed me worse tha all the rest*, these Words, *what then do you i tend to do Child* ? This nettled me worse, as said than all : For it look't as if she had sai *I was not to expect to live always there*, at whi I returned *a little too short* I confess, *Go aw Madam when ever you are a weary of me.*

Bro. Fye Sister, you should not ha' done l for I know she is very kind to you, and lov you very well.

Sister that's true, but I was vext, I asked h Pardon afterwards *as you shall hear.*

Bro. How did she take it *then* ?

Sister, Calmly and obligingly enough, *I J* Cousin said she, *you are moved*, I will take n thing ill from you, and therefore we will say more of it now, I hope ways may be found Accomodate Things between you and your Fath *still*, and I will be very glad to be Instr mental to bring it to pass for you, for your o Sake.

Bro: That was kind, and very much like h for she is a very good Woman.

Sister, It was so, *and moved me so much the ther Way*, That I went to her immediately, a kist her, and asked her Pardon, for being so Ru to her, and would have kneeled, but she wo not let me.

Bro: And was the young Gentleman there to see all this?

Sister, Yes he was, and then it was, That as I said, he behaved so very obligingly to me, he told his Mother, for he seemed to speak *to her,* That he had found out a Way effectually to reconcile my Father and me, if I would approve of it, I told him I could not but approve of any reasonable Way to be reconciled to my Father, for no body could suppose it was pleasant to me to be turned out of my Father's House, and look t upon like a Vagabond, and having no Fortune or Subsistance, be left to go to Service, or be kept as it were upon Charity. He turned to me, and said, you know Madam the Offers of Marriage I have made to you, your Aunt *my kind Mother here,* knows I am sincere in the Proposal, if you accept me, let all the Breach lye on me, if when your Father and I debate it, he insists that you are in the wrong, I'll ask him Forgiveness in your stead, and I doubt not to prevail upon him to accept of it, if you do not appear in the wrong, and yet if he is obstinate, I'll endeavour to make up the Loss of a Father to you, by doing every thing I can to make you forget the Affliction that is past, nor never enquire whether he will give yon any Portion or no.

Bro: Was it possible for you to Answer any Thing to such a proposal, when made in such serious Terms? certainly you conld not Banter him than as you did before.

Sister, No I did not Banter him, *I answered him thus,* I told him that his Offer was too much for him to make, or for me to refuse without an Apology,

Apology, for not making him a suitable return; but that he and I yet differed about the main Question, (*viz.*) *What it was my Father and I parted about*, and perhaps he and I should part about the same: For if before hand I knew that he was against my Part, then he was not able to be an Advocate; but only took upon him to bear the Ignominy of a Submission for me, which was a Work I was not willing to put upon him, and a Debt I was not willing to owe him: That I had *too much* Respect for him to suffer him to do the first, and *too little* to Load my self with the Obligation of the last. That on the other Hand, if he justified me, and believed my Father in the Wrong, the Thoughts of reconciling of my Father was at an End. That as to taking me without it, I told him *as I told you just now*, That I seemed a fitter Match for one of his Father's Foot-men, than for *his Father's eldest Son*; and had too much Respect for the Family, to fill up such a Place, upon such mean Conditions.

Bro. But he might have answered all that, *by telling you*, he took all that Part upon himself.

Sister, He did so, *and told me* he would make the same Settlement upon me, as if I had my Father's Blessing and a Portion: and he would apply himself for both afterwards.

Bro. What could you say to that?

Sister, I turned then to my Aunt, for this was a publick Communing, *it was no Courtship at all*, I asked her thus, Madam there is another Impossibility in the Way, that you know

of

of, which really ought to prohibit my speaking of it, tho' this Breach has happened between my Father and me, and I seem to be out of his Government; *yet I do not think my self at Liberty by it to dispose of my self without his Leave or Consent, or at least without asking it: If upon any such Motion he Answers*, Let her do what she pleases, as she has put her self out of my Care, so she shall be out of my Concern; *if he says so, I shall know then what I have to do*, but *till such* or some other *Answer is obtained from my Father, I don't think the Question ought so much as to be asked of me, at least if it be, I ought to give no other Answer to it.*

Bro: That was very Respectfully answer'd *as to my Father.* What followed?

Sister, My Aunt answered me, *Leave that to me Child, I'll Answer for that*, I answered, I shall leave it to you with all my Heart Madam, but I can make no Answer then, till you shall be pleased to let me know *when I am* at Liberty to Answer, and *when not*; well *Niece said my Aunt*, to put you out of pain about that; I have talk't with your Father and Mother already about it, and I find them indeed very Angry, and dissatisfied with their Daughter, but upon no other Account backward or unwilling to the proposal, well Madam *said* I, a little surpriz'd, then you have gone further in this matter than I imagined: and *whats next* said I? next Child, *said she*, why if you would but go along with me, and speak but one Word to your Father, nay half so much as you did to me just now, *for no Cause at all*; it would be all over, and if the Family was uneasy to you upon any other

other Account, we should fetch you out of it again in as short a Time as you could desire, *do Child* says the good old Lady, *I'll introduce you, I'll make half your Submission* for you.

Bro. Indeed I'd ha' gone with her; *I wonder at you*, if any one would do half so much for me, I'd go tomorrow Morning, as far as things are gone with me.

Sister, *Well*, I was once of the Mind to have gone too, *but I did not.*

Bro: What could you say to her?

Sister, I said these very Words, *Madam I find a greater Obstacle here than before, and I don't know, but if it had not been on this Account, I should ha' been glad of your Offer; but do you think my Father shall say, That whereas I would not submit to him upon the just Foundation, on which he differed with me*, yet *that I could come Home to cry for a Husband!* No Madam, *no one on Earth shall say that of me, I am not in such Distress yet.*

Bro: I should never ha' made that Scruple, Indeed Sister you are wondrous nice!

Sister, Why Brother, What would you think of any young Lady that should make Way for your Addresses upon such low Terms? would you not think them very Fond?

Bro. No indeed, nor he would not neither, I dare say.

Sister, I resolved I would not put my self so much at his Mercy.

Bro: What said he to it?

Sister, He said what was *like himself*, very obliging.

ging he told me, *That now I laid a double Affliction upon him, for I made him that was willing to doany thing in the World, to bring about my Return to my Father, be the only Obstacle in the way of it*; I old him he knew how to remove that Obstacle ery easily, which was by thinking no more of ne; and perhaps in Time I might see my Misake, and by my Aunt's Mediation make my Peace with my Father, or my Father might abate his rigorous Humour, and it might go off gain without it, or if neither happened, as I was ot a Wife fit for a Gentleman, and was too roud to take up with a Footman, I was in no aste, I could remain as I was.

Bro: You are extravagantly stiff.

Sister, Why, really Brother I think my Circumstance requires it, more than if I had been in my Father's House; *for to have consented one Moment sooner for my Condition*, had been the same thing as to be taken in Charity; besides, I forsaw the dispute we should have about what our Family Breach began upon, and to which this was but the Introduction, and therefore I was resolved to be open and free with them before Hand, whether we came to agree at last or no: and as I have told you all this, only to bring in the other, so I'll omit all the rest of our Discourse, and come to that Point.

Bro: Do so, for I think you said I was a little concerned in it.

Sister, So you are, *but not much*. Well Mr. . . . . and my Aunt too, said a great many very kind things to me after that, but at

laſt I turned to my Aunt, *Madam ſays I*, I can not but think all our Diſcourſe remote and foreign; and ſince you will have me ſpeak of a Thing which I never had any Thoughts of, I ought to be very plain and free, *eſpecially ſince you are pleaſed to give me Leave*, do ſo *my Dear* ſaid my Aunt, why then Madam ſaid I, we are talking of reconciling me to my Father, and *as I told you*, I ſhall be very glad of it, but as to making that Reconciliation a Means to what Mr. . . . propoſes, I do not ſee it will be any thing to the Purpoſe. *why ſo Niece* ſays my Aunt, why Madam *ſaid I*, thi, was the Reaſon why I have two or three times asked Mr. . . . . if he rightly underſtood the Reaſons and Circumſtances of the Breach between me and my Father, and he was pleaſed to ſay he did, *tho' I can hardly think it.* Now Madam *ſays I*, it is my Opinion that Mr. . . . . and I ſhall differ as much *about the ſame Things* as my Father and I did tho' perhaps not with ſo much unkindneſs, *eſpecially if we differ about it before Hand*, and therefore it is beſt Fighting that Battel *before* than *after*, for you ſee I can deliver my ſelf from the Fury of a Father, but I know not my Caſe *if it had been a Husband*; beſides *Madam* think it is honeſter and kinder to Mr. . . . . to have all this Matter ſettled and diſputed *now* than to leave things to hereafter; when I ſhall have neither Liberty *to go away*, nor freedom of Speech *at Home*, which would be to make my *bad Caſe* ten times worſe than it is.

Bro: What ſaid your Aunt to this?

Siſter

Sister, She was ſtunned at it *at Firſt*, and ſeem
e willing to have put it off to another Time,
hich ſhe afterwards told me, was, becauſe ſhe
as afraid my Caſe ſhould be repreſented too
ich to my Diſadvantage: Mr. . . . . ſeing
Mother too backward to talk of it, thought
ere might be ſomething ſhe would not have him
ar, and withdrew, *which I was not pleaſed*
th, for ſince I ſaw they would make a Match
it, and I ſaw no great Reaſon to be averſe, or
leaſt obſtinately ſo; I was willing to come
a certainty, and know what kind of Life I
as to live; for I was reſolved I would no more
a married Nun, than I would be a *Cloiſtered*
aughter; however he being withdrawn, my
unt and I began the following Diſcourſe, which
I give you as ſhort as I can. My Aunt ſpoke firſt
us.

Aunt, Come Child now my Son is gone, let me be
plain with you, and pray take all the freedoms
and Liberty with me that you would now, if
your Brother was here, and let us talk of this
Matter, for I would not have you ſtand in your
own Light; *again*, you ſee how things
ſtand with you and your Father, and *as you*
ſaid before, I doubt it will be hard to bring
you to an Accomodation, but this Match will
make you entirely eaſy.

" *Niece*, Madam ſaid I, as you give me a
Liberty to ſpeak freely, I hope you will not
take it ill that I am very plain: I have no par
ticular Objection againſt the Match with your
Son *as to himſelf*; indeed I did not look upon

" it at first to be a serious Proposal, but since
" you assure me it is, and as you are now instead
" both of a Father and a mother to me, I shall
" give my self up to be entirely disposed by you
" only, my present Difficulties relate to my own
" Circumstances; and the Ground and Reason of
" the Breach with my Father, seems to me to be
" a plain Foundation of the like with my Husband
" If I should ever marry *Mr.* . . . . .
" which would make me more miserable than
" am now.

" *Aunt*, You must explain your self *Child*,
" know the Breach between you and your Fa
" ther was begun about Religion, and the Reform
" tion of his Family which he has happily affect
" ed; and which you and your Brother opposed;
" am loath to bring those things to your mind:
" observe they always bring Tears into you
" Eyes, *Things were carried too high*, ; we a
" have thought you were both in the Wrong
" *but that is not the Case now.*

Niece, Pardon me *Madam* said I, *that is ju*
" *the Case now*, and as you have heard Partie
" against me, so I doubt not you will hear m
" too, for while you believe me in the Wrong
" *Mr.* . . . . and I can never be Right; sup
" pose I should do just by him as I did by m
" Father, what then?

Aunt, I hope you will not *my Dear.*

Niece, No *Madam* indeed I will not, I will no
" go away from him: but to prevent that,
" will never have him till he and I adjust the ma
" ter *as to what* Liberty I may expect, and *wh*

no

" *not*: for I will never marry *as I said* to be " my Husband's *Cloistered Wife*, any more " than I would stay at Home to be my *Father's* " *Nun*.

" *Aunt*, Why Child, your Difference with " your Father as I understand it, was that when " he set up the Worship of G O D in his Fa- " mily, you would not join with him: but made " a Scoff at his Resolution of reforming his Fa- " mily, and several such Things.

" *Niece*, Did I not say *Madam*, That I believe " *Mr*. . . . . and you also had not had a " fair Account of the Thing: I cannot wonder " *Madam*, that you thought me in the Wrong, " I wonder *Mr*. . . . . could think of me for " a Wife, if I had been such a Daughter.

" *Aunt*, Come Child undeceive me then, and " let me hear it all.

" *Niece*, No *Madam* let me only let you hear " it Right: my Father and *Mother* had bred up " me and my Brother as you know, till we were " come to be what we call *Men* and Women, " we had been used to Company, to good *Man*- " ners, to Converse in the World with People " of Quality and good Breeding: and were " come to an Age, in which we might be thought " fit to be trusted with so much of the Govern- " ment of our selves, as to be past Schooling and " Tutelage; we made no other use of those Li- " berties than became a modest Behaviour; they " can charge us with nothing Criminal or Scan- " dalous: no Vice, nothing injurious to our " Reputation, when all of a sudden without any

No

" Notice we were fallen upon, abridged of all " lawful Liberties, were to have new Lectures " of Family Discipline read to us, which we were " absolutely to submit to, and to commence Chil- " dren again, *this you may be sure we thought hard*, " and my Share was immediately to fall under " Correction, for my *Mo*ther without any Pro " vocation *as I thought*, flew to my Closet, took " away all my Books, and flung them in the Fire, " and laid her Hands upon me into the Bargain; " this I thought *at my Age* was unreasonable " Usage.

" *Aunt*, Well Child, but *you say* you made " no ill use of your Liberties, whereas you went " every L O R Ds Day abroad to the Park, " and a visiting you went, every Day almost to " the Play, spent your time in playing at Cards " reading Plays, and the like.

Niece: It is true *Madam* we did so, but we " did not reckon these unlawful Liberties *Ma-* " *dam*, nor *do I yet* think so.

" *Aunt*, I am sorry for that *my dear*, I " am quite of another mind.

" *Niece*: But *Ma*dam *if they were so*, who gave " us the Example? Who bred us up in that Li " berty? Did not *my Father* and *Mother* always " go out with us to the Park a Sundays? and " go with us to the Play? Nay did they not " lead us into it by their Example! and did " not my *Mo*ther give me most of those very " Books she threw in the Fire, *out of her own* " *Closet*! if this was a wicked Course, why had " they not brought us up otherways? and not

introduced us to it themselves?

Aunt, *My Child*, they own they were in the wrong, *and that is their Grief*; I have heard them express themselves with Tears, and a just Sorrow on that Account: and they are forward enough to charge themselves with it, as the Cause of all the Obstinacy of you and your Brother in resisting their measures of Reformation, and you should not Reproach them *my dear* with what they repent of.

" *Niece*, I do not Reproach them, perhaps they have Cause for their Repentance; *but still* it may be allowed for a Reason against their so violently driving us into their new measures; and breaking us off from all our Friends and Society *at once*: without any other Reason, but that they thought fit to have it so, *if we had been little Children*, it had been another Case.

' *Aunt*, I cannot but be against you *Cousin* in it, tho' that part may seem hard to you, for if the Things was necessary and just, you could not justify so great a Breach with your Father and *Mother* for the manner of it.

" *Niece*, This is what I look't for *Madam*, and is the Reason why I mentioned it; for if *Mr.* . . . . . thinks to go on with what my Father had begun, *I am no Wife for him to be sure*, if I were, why should I come away from my Father?

" *Aunt*, Why if you were married to my Son . . . . . would you refuse to have him Pray to GOD in his Family, or to join with

him

" him if he did ? *indeed Cousin* I love you very
" well, *but I have so much Respect for him also,*
" and above both so much zeal for the keeping up
" the Face of Religion in Families, that I could
" not in Conscience be for the match.

" *Niece*, If *Madam* that had been the Quar-
" rel between my Father and me, *why did I come*
" *to your House* ? do I scruple going to Pray-
" ers with you all here ? Did I omit going to
" Church with my Father ? or do I omit it here?
" you are satisfied I knew the Orders of your
" Family before I came hither. *This makes it plain*
" it was not that made the Dispute, but the man
" ner of his Acting, and abridging us of all
" those Liberties he had bred us up in, and their
" beginning a new Discipline, when he ought to
" have allowed us to be past Discipline : why had
" he not without all that Ceremony, and those
" Severities upon us, called his Family to Pray
" ers and called us in, do you think *Madam* we
" would have run away, or have left our Father
" because of his going to Prayers.

" *Aunt*, Well *Niece*, tho' he might ha' done
" so, yet I cannot think *you were in the Right of*
" *it* nor your Brother neither ; who I hear insult
" his Father very rudely since, because he has a
" Estate without him : but I fear that young
" Gentleman *will come to want Bread yet*, unless
" his Father help him ; I am perswaded I shall
" live to see him *brought to his Father's door in*
" *bad a Condition as the Prodigal, tho' without*
" *the Prodigal's Repentance.* I wish I am not too
" true a Propheteſs.

Niece

" *Niece*, This very thing is the Reason *Ma-*
" *dam*, why I am so willing to speak of this Case,
" before I can talk any thing to the Purpose a-
" bout *Mr.* ....

" *Aunt* Why *Child*, what does this relate to
" him ? *he knows it all*, and *we know it all*,
" and yet we are all willing he should make you
" his Wife, *if* these things do not hinder on
" his Side, sure they can never hinder on your
" Side.

" *Niece*, I think just the contrary *Madam*, &
" *I beg you will bear with me in speaking it plain-*
" *ly* ; it's true he knows all this as well as you
" do, but if he *as you do* believes me in the wrong,
" I would be glad to know how I *that think my*
" *self in the Right*, am to live with him in the
" Case of such Liberties as I justify, and he
" condemns *to be sure*, if I thought them not jus-
" tifiable, I would go Home to my Father this
" Minute and ask his Pardon upon my Knees :
" and if I continue to think them justifiable, I
" shall think it more hard to be abridged by
" my Husband than I did by my Father. And
" this is the Difficulty I mentioned before.

" *Aunt*, Why Child what Liberties do you
" mean, or who would you speak of in such a Case,
" I hope you would desire no unlawful unbe-
" coming Liberties when you were a Wife and a
" Mistress of a Family ?

" *Niece*, I hope not Madam, *nor any unbeco-*
ming Restraints neither, and that is the Rea-
son of my Discourse ; he may think himself

" willing to run the Risque of the first, but I
" am not willing to run the Risque of the last;
" for our power of acting under them will be
by no Means equal.

Just at this Word the young Gentleman comes in again.

Aunt, Here's my *Son* let him Answer for him-
" self. State your Objection.

Niece, No *Madam*, you can do it much bet-
ter.

[*The Aunt repeats the very Words to him*

" *Son*, I wonder *Madam* you should think
" should practise Restraints with you; I see
" nothing in your Conversation that prepare
" me to expect you can want a Restrain
" or that bids me fear it.

" *Niece*, I may be a worse *Wife* than I am
" *Cousin*, as I have been a worse Daughter t
" my *Father*, than I have been a Niece to m
" *Aunt*.

Son, I am not so willing to suppose that, as
" am well satisfied of the contrary.

" *Niece*, But I would know what Restraints
" am to expect.

" *Son*: You can hardly mention upon *wh*
" *Occasions*.

Niece: Upon the very probable Occasion of m
" being a *bad Wife*.

" *Son*: That's a general Head and yet you sha
" have a particular Answer to it: Madam I kno
" no practicable Restraints that a Husban
" *can honestly make use of*, I mean but those of
" treaties, Persuasions and kind reasonings, an
" those I know you would allow. *Niec*

Niece: You are capable of learning, tho' you may know no other yet.

" *Son*: Pray *Madam* be so particular then as to Name some of the Cases in which you apprehend I shall restrain you.

" *Niece*: Perhaps I will go to the Play, *what will you do*, you wont go with me.

" *Son*, To the Door Madam *to see you safe*, I should.

" *Niece*: Perhaps when you will go to Prayers, I go a visiting.

" *Son:* If you wont let me pray *with you*, Madam I hope you'l let me pray *for you.*

" *Niece*: Suppose I have a Mind to go to the park a Sundays.

" *Son*, I'll shew you the reasons why I dare not go with you, and use all the Entreaties and perswasions I can with you not to act so much against your own Conscience, and hope to prevail with you too, but to wave such Suggestions, upon the whole *Madam*, it is my principle, and I believe it will be my practice, That between *Man* and *Wife* no Violence *can be justified*, but that of affectionate tender perswasion, and a reasoning Importunity. My Disposition does not lead me to Rudeness, all the Government and all the Obedience of the married State, that I have any Notion of, consists in the Dominion of Love, and the Subjection of Love; what Monster I may be transformed into, I cannot say, *but this is my judgment*, and I perswade my self *you are not* apprehensive of the rest, anymore *than I am* apprehensive of your acting as you say you will.

Sister, This Brother was the Substance of our Discourse, and an odd sort of Courting you'l say it was, *and thus the Case stands now*, what I shall resolve to do in it, I know not, what would you advise me to.

Bro: *I'll be very plain with you Sister*, if you were in as good Terms with your Father as ever you were, yet if this had offered then, I would have advised you to have had him. If ever you expected to be happy, he is a sober virtuous generous-spirited Gentleman, and such a one can never use you ill: *I know you love Sir Anthony. . . .* but you are undone *if ever you have him*, for he is a Brute, and a Beggar, he only wants your Money; and if he marries you, he has neither Estate to maintain you, Sence to entertain you, nor good manners to use you well.

Sister, I believe I shall take your Advice *truly*, but I shall not be too hasty.

Bro: I am glad to see you in so fair a Way to come off of this ugly Family Broil.

Sister, I do not see that this will bring me off of it *at all*, my Father will be the same Man.

Bro: *Yes yes* it will bring you off, he'll bring you to be reconciled, and my Aunt will work another Way, *and if it should be impossible*; still you are provided for.

Sister, I can't say but I shall be provided for, *yet I own I shall never enjoy my self*, for whether I am Right or Wrong, I can not say I am easy to be at such a Variance, as not to be in speaking Terms with my own Father and Mother.

Bro

Bro: That's just my Case, I know not what I all do to go Abroad, and perhaps may never see em again, and not so much as see them, or have eir Blessing, or take my Leave of them, I now not what to do in it.

Sister, Dear Brother why will you go, I think ou take the wrongest Step in the World.

Bro: In what Child ?

Sister, To go into the Army, what Occasion ave you for it ? you told me you would only to Travel.

Bro: Well *be easy*, I am going to Travel first, r *a Year*, I design to go into Italy.

Sister, But you must go to the Army at last.

Bro: *Ay*, but not a great while yet, tho' per: aps time enough to make my Dream good.

Sister, My Aunt's Words came into my head, hen you told me that ugly Dream, I wish there e not something in it at last, if you did not go to the Army, I should not be afraid of it.

Bro: I do not love to heed Dreams.

Sister, I have heard our Ministers say, there is just] Medium to be observed in the giving heed Dreams, (*viz*) *That we should not lay too much ress upon them, and yet not wholly slight them.*

Bro:. I observe the Dreams that signify bad tid- gs are true oftenest, I Dreamed exactly *about Week before it happened*, of our Breach with y Father.

Sister, Here comes my *Aunt*, we must talk no ore of that now.

The End of the second Dialogue.

The Third

Dialogue.

HE two last Dialogues are to b understood to be a Recapitulat on of what had been acted son time past, in order to introdu this part, and preserve the Conn ctions of the History. The Daug ter is now to be talked of, as having been marr ed some Time. The Son was gone to Travel, an having been returned into Flanders, was gone t his Post in the Army, where being in the Con federate Service, and commanded out upon Party, he fell in with a Party of the *French* and being very much wounded in the Actio was taken Prisoner, and carried to *Cambray* from whence he wrote his Sister a Letter, c which in its Course.

The new married Couple had for above tw Years lived together, as they were at first wit his Father and her Aunt, during which Time sh had had two Children, and the Treatment sh ha

had met with there, had been so kind, so divert ng and so obliging, That she could have no Rea- on to say that they had not performed fully he Engagement her Husband had made with her o endeavour to make her forget the Affliction of the Breach with her Father.

Her Husband carried it with so much Tender- ness and Affection to her, as was capable to engage and win a Temper far more Refractory than hers, and by his obliging Carriage he prevented many little Excursions which her Inclination would otherwise have led her too; yet two Things remained. (1st.) She could not perswade her self to like a regular Kind of Family Govern- ment; She loved Company, which she had been ac- customed to, and a little to Play; and when she made her visits, would sometimes stay at Cards or other Diversions very late. (2d.) She could not bear to think of stooping to own her Misbehaviour to her Father, or to make any Sub mission to him; nor could her Husband, tho' he failed in no Endeavour, bring that Breach to an End without it.

As her Family encreased, and on the other Hand her Ways were not very agreable to the Family she was in, it seemed necessary, to think of settling themselves apart; and her Husband having a very good House of his own near the City, it was resolved they should do so, and accordingly as we say, they begin House- keeping.

And now began the Tryal of her Husband's Temper, and Patience to the utmost: The Case

Case was thus, Being now to be a Master of Family, he was obliged to take upon him th Charge of Family Government; he had no only been religiously educated *but as has been b fore observed*, was a very serious religious Gent man himself; it was his Affliction, that h fonnd very little Complaisance in his Wife to an thing that was religious, and therefore he entre into no Conference with her about establishin the Orders of his Family, but as soon as h House was furnished, and his Family remove he resolved like a true Christian, and accordin to that which even the Heathens directed to *Jove Principium*, and giving her no Room to di pute or decline it to begin with the Worship God in his House, without so much as mentio ing it to his Wife; as a thing which it ough to be taken for granted, was as naturally an necessarily to be done in a Family, as providin Food and Conveniencies for their Subsistance however to make this more Eligible, and to in troduce it without leaving Room for her to o ject; he invited his Father and Mother and Minister who was their Acquaintance to sup wit them *the first Night of their Housekeeping*, an before Supper, his Wife being in the Room, h ask't the Minister aloud, *if he would please to b their Chaplain for that Night*, the Wife coul not offer to oppose it, tho' he could easily pe ceive she look't a little strange at it, so the Min ster as had been concerted gladly accepting th Offer, Books were brought in, the Servants ca

led

led, and Family Prayers performed *the first Night* : after this was done and Supper over, he invited the Minister *who it seems lived in the Country* to stay two or three Days with him, which he also accepted ; so of Course Prayers were had every Night and Morning while the Minister stai'd ; and thus the Worship of God was quietly introduced into his house, and after the Minister was gone, the Servants to whom it was no Novelty, having been all in the Family before, came of Course together at the usual hour, and he performed it himself.

His Wife who was more disgusted at his taking no notice of it to her, than at the thing it self, *as if it was a beginning of some new Method which he intended to take with her*, took a great many Ways to let him see she was not very well pleased, sometimes at the usual Time when he would say, *Come call in the Servants.* She would give a Smile as a Signal of Contempt ; often she would be busy above Stairs, and not come down at all, very often; tho' she would come, she would make him wait a good while ; and when she came into the Room, would say with some Disdain *what need you ha' staid for me.*

However *he took no notice of all this*, and tho" she strove by all the Ways she could to ha made him speak of it first, yet he shunned it : resolving not to have any Dispute with her *if it were possible to avoid it*; but she soon took Care to make it unavoidable.

Being become now a Mistress of a Family, he hoped

hoped she would have had some Consideration for the Station she was in, and have appeared with a little of that Gravity and Authority that became her; but on the contrary she entirely omitted all Appearance of any such thing, she visited oftner than ever, Play'd at Cards abroad two or three Times a Week, and *at home* as often as she could get Company, and went almost nightly to the Play, in short she began to lead a Life so different from the rest of the Family, and so uneasy to him, and all his and her Friends, That it was greatly afflicting and perplexing to him.

During all this Time he treated her with the utmost Tenderness and the most obliging Carriage was possible, only it could not be concealed neither from her, nor from all the house, That his Wife's Conduct was an extreme Affliction to him, *and the more*, because he saw no possible method to go about to Reclaim her.

His Wife finding her self unrestrained, grew still worse, and at last contented not her self to give her vanity its full swing, but appeared discontented that he would not do the like; if she went to the Play, he would sometimes go with her to the Door, *as he had said he would when he courted her*, but would not go in, which she pretended she took ill of him, when he visited any where *with her*, where he saw her resolved to stay late at Cards, he would excuse himself, and leave her; and it was much if she did not Flout him before the Company in some such manner

manner as this *what you want to go home and say your Prayers!* which he would turn off with a Smile or a Jeſt, and withdrew; but ſtill theſe things were very grievous to him.

During all this and much more, *nothing answered her ſo much*, as that he would not take the Caſe into Debate with her, but he reſolved to go on in the Duties of a Maſter in his Family, and to give her no Occaſion to ſay he uſed her amiſs; but all this while ſaid nothing to her, till at laſt ſhe began with him upon the following Occaſion.

His eldeſt Child, a fine little Boy, was now almoſt three Years old, and he had been but too well aſſured, That his Wife took little Care to Teach it any Thing that might lay an early Foundation of a religious Knowledge in the Mind of the Child; wherefore upon all Opportunities he would be talking to the little Creature in ſuch Language as was fitteſt for him to underſtand. (*viz.*) *Of who made him?* and *who Redeemed him? what God was*; and *that he muſt ſerve God*, and the like; *as is uſual to ſay to little Children*: and his Wife takes that Opportunity to break in upon him one Day in purſuance of her former Reſolution, and began with him while he was talking to his little Son in the following Manner.

Wife. So *Mr.* . . . . You are worthily imployed.

Huſ. My Dear, I hope it's no ill Imployment.

Wife,

Wife, *No*, *no*, only suitable to that absolute Government of your Family, which you entred upon at your beginning to keep House.

Hus. My dear, I hope I have not encroached upon your Province?

Wife No, *no*, my Province! to be sure I am not fit to instruct a Child of three Years old.

Hus. My speaking to the Child to let him know *who made him*, and *who Redeemed him*, and *who he was Born to serve*; was a thing so innocent, and I thought so natural, That I wonder it should offend you *my dear.*

Wife, *No no*, Offend me! why should it Offend me, you know I cannot do it my self, having never been taught any thing till I was almost 20 Years old.

Hus. Tho you have had Knowledge enough *my dear*, yet I have heard you say it had been better if your Father had begun early with his Family, and that it had prevented the Breach that has happened since.

Wife, *Yes. Yes*, and made you have a better Wife.

Hus. My dear, you never heard me Complain.

Wife. No, your Reproofs are Silent, but very legible: and easy to be understood.

Hus. Wherein *my dear*, do I reprove you?

Wife, Only by taking all your Family measures without consulting your Wife, as one not worth

worth having her Consent asked in the Matter or not capable of giving it.

Hus. What Family Measures do yo mean, *my dear* we have not been Six Months in a Family yet, and I know not one single thing in the House that I have ordered without you.

Wife, Not one Thing! *why*, did not you bring home your Chaplain without me, and set up your Family Orders without me, why was not I worthy being spoken to about it, I suppose you fancied I would oppose it, *as you had once a Notion I did at my Fathers*, and so you treated me as if I were first an Athiest, that would oppose any thing that was good or religious; and 2dly, An upper Servant whose Business it was not to join in making Orders, but to submit to them when made, *but I don't trouble you much at your devotions.*

Hus. It is my great Misfortune that you have kept this in your Mind so long, and not let me know *that you took Offence at it*, before, nothing was ever done with more Innocence of Intention, nor never construed in a more contrary Manner to my Meaning, I could have no thought that you would oppose the natural Duty of all Creatures to worship and serve, *the Being that created them*: how could I have such a thought of you *my dear*, when I know you always willingly joined with us at my Fathers, and when I heard you declare to your Aunt that the coming to Prayers was no part of the thing which made the Breach at your Fathers; do not take it ill *my dear*, indeed I had not the

least

least Thoughts of what you suggest, and if I omitted any thing, which I ought to ha' done in Respect to you *My dear*, I ask you Pardon.

(Offers to Kiss her, she turns
(away from him.

Wife, What signifies that when you have used me so, you know I must submit to your Orders, now they are made.

Hus. My dear, Is there any thing in my Family Orders which offends you, or that you would not have done? if there is, let me know, and it shall be altered.

Wife, *No*, *no* it's past the Time to ask that Question now, you know it is my Part to submit.

Hus. My dear, I cannot but think *it hard*, you should talk of submitting, where there is nothing imposed; I impose nothing, and Offer to Alter any Thing you shall direct to be altered.

Wife, Is it not all imposing, when you did it all without so much as speaking a Word to me about it, tho' the Matter of it was never so good yet the Manner of doing it was by imposing a Compliance in me, since I was not though worthy to be spoken to about it, but you see *I do not Trouble you much with my Company.*

Hus. That's my Grief *my dear*, and princi-

pally

pally becauſe I fear *at laſt* it will not be your Comfort.

Wife, What need that trouble you?

Hus. My dear, if you ſuppoſe I love you, you cannot think I can be leſs concerned for your future Happineſs, than for your preſent.

Wife, *I* ſuppoſe none of the three.

Hus. If you do me Juſtice you will be ſatisfied of them all, but *you are Angry now*, I'll wave that Diſcourſe till you are better ſatisfied.

Wife, *Your Grief* you ſpeak of, is not at all at the Occaſions given me,

Hus. My Grief is, That the Occaſion you take of being diſpleaſed is from what is my indiſpenſible Duty and yours alſo.

Wife, The doing your Duty is none of my Grief.

Hus, *My dear* it is *a double Grief to me*, to hear you ſay the Reaſon of your Diſlike is from my Error in the Manner of introducing it, *had I foreſeen it*, I would ha' made no Scruple to ha' laid down all my Authority as you call it *as a Maſter*, and ha' begged of you to let it be done.

Wife, *Don't banter me*, you would have asked my Leave to have ſet up Family Worſhip would you? what if I had refuſed, would you ha' let it alone for that?

Hus. That is not a Queſtion to be asked, *I am ſure you would not have refuſed*; you could not have refuſed ſuch a natural known Duty, and the certainty

certainty of your free Consent was a very good Reason, why I should omit the Ceremony, nay, if I had thought of it, I question whether I should have asked you; I rather should ha' thought I had obliged you in it, and should have offended in making it a Question whether you consented to it or no.

Wife, But the more Ingenuous Truth of the two *had been to ha' said*, That if you had asked me, and I had refused to consent, *yet* that you would ha' done it against my Will, and therefore to avoid the Strife you chose not to propose it, is *not that the Case now?*

Hus. My dear, I own it is a Duty that I dare not omit, and tho' if I had thought that, you had expected it, I would have asked your Consent, yet I should have asked it upon a Presumption of your being ready to agree to it; and it would ha' been the greatest Affront to you in the World, to have supposed otherwise of you, we ought no more to ask one anothers Leave to Pray to G O D, than we ought to ask one anothers Consent to Eat or Drink, rise up or sit down.

Wife, *Well*, you see as *I told you*, I dont disturb you at it.

Hus. But if you knew how much that does disturb me, I believe you would consider of it.

Wife, I don't trouble my self about that, I assure you.

Hus. Well my dear, I remember what I said to you before we were married at your Aunt's

House

House upon this very Subject, *when I little thought you were in earnest*, but I'll perform it faithfully.

Wife, I remember nothing of it.

Hus. I told you, *if you would not let me pray* with you *I would pray* for you, *and so I do heartily*, and I hope GOD will hear me at last, he has Ways to move your Heart, *tho' I cannot prevail.*

Wife, *O, Your Memory is very good*, and that makes me remember something too that was said at the same Time, *which I suppose you have forgot.*

Hus. What's that my Dear.

Wife, *Why*, That I would have my Liberty, and would not be tyed to your Formalities, but that I would go a visiting, when I pleased, *tho' it were* when you were at your long Prayers; and that I would go to the Play, and to the Park a Sundays too, *if I pleased.*

Hus. My dear, have I not given you as much liberty as you have desired? have I offered the least Restraint to you? I have not so much as used the Entreaties and Perswasions that I capitulated with you to have Liberty for.

Wife, But I can see well enough how you like, how ill you are pleased.

Hus. Nay *my dear*, I never promised you that I would like such Things, and be pleased with them, that's what you cannot say we agreed upon; nor I believe have you so little Sense to expect *that I can like it*; but hitherto you

you have not had the least Trouble of a Complaint from me, I believe and *heartily Pray* that G O D will in his own Time open your Eyes to see that you are in the Wrong, and restore you to me and to your Friends, that we may yet have the Comfort of one another, and till that Time, I bear all you think fit to do, with as much Patience as I can.

Wife, But still you are going on with your Family Government, and now you are for Catechising your Children, as if I was not able to tell them *who made them* as well as you.

Hus. I never questioned your Ability, *my dear.*

Wife, *No*, nor my willingness *neither*, for you never asked me whether I had done it, or would do it, or not; what was this but exposing me to all the House, as if I was not fit to be trusted with teaching a little Child? but that you were fain to do it your self.

Hus. Instructing our Childreu is the natural Work both of Father and Mother; and my being talking to the Child in that Manner, no way implys that you either *do not*, or *cannot*, or that I think so; in that your Influence is not just *my dear.*

Wife, I think it below you.

Hus. My dear, how can you think that, when you said to me *of your own Father*, That if he had done it sooner by you, the fatal Breach among you had never happened.

Wife, That Case and this is not alike, I never refused or omitted it, what need you meddle

meddle with it ?

Hus. Well *my dear*, so the Children be but early and rightly instructed, you and I will never differ about *who shall do it* ; do but grant me this, That it ought to be done.

Wife, *Yes*, *Yes*, It ought to be done to be sure.

Hus. Then *my dear*, If you will allow me so much plainness, I'll prove to you, that I have not done amiss, because it had not been done to this Child, and therefore it was my Duty to do it, you having thought fit to omit it.

Wife, How do you make that out. *that I have omitted it* ?

Hus. You shall have unanswerable Evidence immediately for your Conviction. Come hither Harry, Come hither my dear.

(He calls the little Boy
(and Examins him.

Fa. Who made you *my dear* ?
Child, *God.*
Fa. Who told you so ?
Child, You did *Pappa.*
Fa. When my dear ?
Child, Just now *Pappa.*
Fa. Did no Body ever tell you so before ?
Child, *No Pappa.*
Mo: Sirrah did not I tell you so ?
Child, No *Mamma.*
Mo: Nor Nurse neither ?
Child, No *Mamma.*
Mo: You tell a Lie Sirrah.
Child, No indeed Mamma.
Hus. Nay *my dear*, Children and Fools *you*

know, &c.

Wife, I am sure he tells an untruth now.

Hus. Well *my dear*, do not be angry with the Child, for I asked him over and over, *who made him*? and he said, *he could not tell*, then I asked him *if no Body ever told him*, and he said *no*, and if he had not answered me so, which a little surprized me, and troubled me too, I should not have committed this Invasion upon your Office.

Wife, *Well well*, It's time enough to teach him all that, he is not 3 Years old.

Fa. My dear, I thank God it is yet early enough, but never let thee and I dispute about *whose Work it is to instruct our Children*, if we do our Duty and instruct them well, it will find us both Work enough, as they grow up, we shall be glad to help one another, and not think it an Encroachment upon our Office.

Wife, But it is nonsence to meddle with Children at three Years old, they will Answer like Parrots, and say what they are bid, but they understand nothing of what they say.

Hus. With Submission *my dear*, that is a mistake, an awe and sence of the Greatness and Majesty of G O D, and the fear we ought to have of offending him, is capable of being received by a Child as soon as it can speak.

Wife, I do not see it's to any Manner of Purpose.

Hus. My dear does he know you?

Wife, Yes to be sure.

Hus. Does he know you have a Rod, and that he

he must not be a naughty Boy, and that if he does, he will make you Angry, and you may correct him ?

Wife, What's all that to the Purpose ?

Hus. By the same Rule he is Capable of receiving due Impressions of his Maker.

Wife, Not at all.

Hus. No doubt as soon as G O D has impowered his Soul to receive any Knowledge at all, it is our Duty to help him to receive some Knowledge of G O D : besides *my dear*, you are not ignorant how soon a little Infant will be Taught to Sin, and I think we ought to study to be before Hand with the Devil ; and lay a Foundation of good in our Children, before he can get in, to lay a Foundation of Evil.

Wife. You are wiser than I *to be sure*, and therefore you thought fit to begin *as you suppose* before me, but *to be sure*, before you enquired of me, or consulted with me any thing about it.

Hus. You are disposed to be angry my dear, my Comfort is, you have no Reason, and that I have done nothing but what I think my Duty, and *not that* with a Design to Displease you.

Wife, You Fancy your self very obliging.

Hus. I would be always so to you, *My Dear.*

Wife, Mighty obliging indeed ! in letting me go alone always ; I suppose you are ashamed of your Wife ; if you had, you should not have taken me, *I did not Court you.*

Hus. My dear, I never let you go alone, but to places which I cannot agree to go to, such as the Playhouse and to my Lady. . . . . where you know the Company and the Gaming are things I have not been bred to, and cannot comply with.

Wife, What your Conscience will not let you play a Game at Cards!

Hus. My dear, Suppose it would *as to the simple Action*, yet I own it will not as to the Circumstances.

Wife, What Circumstances, I Beseech you?

Hus. Why first, *I can imploy my time better*, and they that know the value of Time, and the haste we are all making to Eternity, will think themselves obliged to waste as little of their Time as they can, and think it their Duty always to employ it in the best Manner they can possibly.

Wife, I think Time spent in good Company, is not misspent.

Hus. My dear, When you come nearer the End of your Time, *you will think* otherwise.

Wife, That's more than you are sure of.

Hus. For your Sake *my dear*, I hope it will, *it will be a sad Day for you if you should not*, and for me too, if I should live to see it.

Wife, *Well* that is but one of your Niceties, pray what are the rest?

Hus. Why *My dear*, it is true, I have other Scruples, and *my second is this*, I am now a Father and a Master of a Family, and have Servants

vants and Children growing up, I have Duties upon me now, which were not my Duties before, and particularly Family Worship. 3dly, I am obliged in Duty to set no evil Example either to Children or Servants; and on the contrary, to let my Conversation be in all things Examplar, that I may not have either my Servants or Children justify themselves in any Excesses by my Example.

Wife, What's all this to lawful things, such as visiting a Friend, seeing a Play, or a Game at Cards? Those things that you speak of, relate to unlawful Excesses only, such as Drunkenness, Leudness, and such things as those.

Hus. Ay, and other Things too, and those Circumstances make some things unlawful to me, which are not so in themselves; particularly *my dear*, you stay there at Cards till one or two in the Morning, if I did so, I must neglect my Duty in my Family, and cause a Game at Cards to supersede the Worship of GOD, would not that Game at Cards be a Sin?

Wife, *Yes*, *Yes*, I told you at Sir Anthony's, *You must go Home and say your Prayers.*

Hus. That was not the kindest Thing that ever you said to me in your Life, *My Dear.*

Wife, I shall always Use you so, when you are so Rude to me to Leave the Company.

Hus. Then I hope you will excuse me from

going again *my dear.*

Wife, You may stay away if you please.

Hus. Indeed my dear I must *stay away,* o offend you by coming away before you ; so I cannot dispense with my Duty to G O I upon any Account whatsoever, I am very sorr you will not take that for a sufficient Ex cuse.

Wife, What need you make Excuses to m *any thing will serve to a Wife you know.*

Hus. I am very loath to disoblige you *m dear,* and therefore I am giving you just Re sons for my Behaviour in every Part, tha your own Judgment may Oblige you to sa you have no Cause to take it ill.

Wife, Other Husbands do not live s do you think any Body but me, has the Husbands go to the Play House Doo with them, and then run away, and Leav them.

Hus. Indeed *my dear,* I cannot compl with you in that Part, and told you so b fore I married you, and if you will Excu me going to the Door with you, I sha take it very kindly, but as for going to th Plays, *as I said of playing at Cards,* I can muc better imploy my Time.

Wife, Yes, Yes, you can go Home to you Prayers, I wonder you don't make your Pray er, an Excuse for going to Dinner.

Hus. My dear, I am sorry to hear you mak a Jest and Scoff *at praying to G O D,* yo never heard me make an Excuse for doing an thing that become me to do in my Life; I a

non

one of those that make a shew or a boast of my Duty; I intreat you upon what do you ground this Banter? Did I ever tell you when I carried you to the Play House, that I must go Home to my Prayers? I tell you plainly *and did so before we were married*, I go to no Plays, but I never said I did not, because I must go to my Prayers?

Wife, No no, But your spending your Time better implys it, for can you spend it better than in your Prayers? and you say you are always to spend your Time as well as you can.

Hus. You talk to me of my Praying *my dear*, as if I were a meer Pharisee, and said my Prayers at the Corner of every Street.

Wife, You make more ado about them a great deal I think than you need.

Hus. I make no boast of them, nor do you know *any more of them* than needful Family Worship requires; if I offered any such thing as Private Prayer with you, I fear you would but make a mock of it.

Wife, *No no*, not I, you may Pray all Night and all Day too if you please, for you know you are to spend all your Time as well as you can.

Hus. My dear, there are Duties for a Christian Life, for every part of Time; without letting them interfere one with another; and yet *my dear* when you are at the Play, I don't know whether it might not be as proper a Time for me to Pray, as at any Time, especially upon your Account.

Wife,

Wife, Why then, *I pray* more than at another Time?

Hus. For the same Reason that *Job* was offering Sacrifice for his Sons and Daughters, when they were making merry (*viz.*) That they might not *be led into Temptation.*

Wife, I desire none of your Prayers.

Hus. You have the more Occasion for them for that *my dear*, and I the more Reason to Pray for you.

Wife, I had rather you would go to the Play with me.

Hus. I am sorry for the wretched choice you make, *and very sorry* you make it impossible for me to oblige you, I had much rather you would put your self in a Condition that I might according to my own Inclination deny you nothing.

Wife, You will have your own way, you will be *a worse Husband*, before you *are a better.*

Hus. I believe you will be *a better wife*, before you are *a worse.*

Wife, You have *too much Religion* to be a kind Husband.

Hus. L O R D! Give you more Religion *my dear*, than you will be *a kinder wife*,

Wife, Don't tronble your Head to Pray for me, *I tell you*, till I put up a Bill to you as they do at Church.

Hus. I shall always Pray for you my dear.

Wife, You'l ha' no thanks for it, your Labour is all lost.

Hus.

Hus. I hope not *my dear*, but I entreat you et us have no more of this kind Discourse, you nix it with so much Profaneness [*as well as unindness*, that it is very grievous, and very afflicting to me, I was in hopes never to have seen ou come this length.

Wife, What length am I come ?

Hus. I desire not to enter into particulars, I ear you are laying in a great Stock for Repenance, and our Discourse does but encrease ; therefore I forbear saying any more, or in Multiplying Words there wanteth not in.

Wife, I desire to be used better, or I shall be a orse Wife.

Hus. You are disposed to be out of Temper t this Time *my dear*, I hope you will be of nother Mind when you have considered of it, ll leave you a while.

Wife, For as long as you please.

(He withdraws and goes out
(of Doors.

When her Husband was gone, and she had t a while, and mused upon what she had one ; her Passion began to abate and Reaon to take Place again in her Soul, and first er Unkindness to her Husband began to shew self to her ; I believe *says she to her self*, have angered him heartily ; well it can't be elp't now, let him *'een take it if he will.*

But a little further thinking brought her ore to her self *and then* her Affection to him irred in her, and she breaks out again. But *hy should I treat him thus? he never was unkind*

kind to me in his Life, he has been the tender-eſt Husband that ever Woman had, and has taken me with Circumſtances ill enough, I'll go and heal it all again, take him in my Arms, and ſpeak kindly to him.

Away ſhe goes to ſpeak to him, but cannot find him, ſhe enquires for him, the Servants ſay he is in his Cloſet, up ſhe flys thither, but he was come down again, and was gone out: then looking out at the Window, ſhe ſaw him at a Diſtance walking very melancholy in ſome Fields near the Houſe all alone by himſelf; by this Time ſhe was entirely come to her ſelf, and ſeeing him walking ſo ſolitary, made her very uneaſy; She ſends a Servant to him, to tell him ſhe deſired to ſpeak with him, and in hopes of his coming, ſhe run out into the Garden to meet him, but the Boy brought her Word again he was gone, and he could not find him.

Now ſhe began violently to Reproach her ſelf with her ill uſage of her Husband, and ſhutting her ſelf into her Chamber, ſhe reflected bitterly on her ſelf.

What a Brute have I been ſaid ſhe *to the beſt Husband that ever Woman had, That took me without a Farthing Portion, when I was turned out of Doors by my Father and Mother, that never ſaid an unkind thing to me in his Life that when I have loſt 50 l. at a Time at Play never ſaid ſo much as why did you do ſo, or grudg'd parting with his Money.* What barbarous Language have I given him! *and how calmly and tenderly has he returned all along without*

thout one unkind Word; sure I am the veriest ute of a Wife that ever any Man had, and n't deserve that ever he should have the least lue for me again, (she stopt a while and ept vehemently, and then went on with her clamations upon her self.

Then what have I quarrelled with him for! *for what all the Women in the Nation but would Value a Man for;* (*viz.*) *For his be- sober and virtuous and religious; and did er a Fool talk to a Husband as I did, about Family Orders! his Praying to G O D! d the like, why, my own Conscience tells me t he is in the Right, and I am in the wrong, d tho' I mind nothing my self, I cannot but n he does well; sure I am the worst Crea- e alive! There are many Women and en too, that have Religion little enough, but e never any Woman abused a Husband for ng better than themselves before!*

Here she burst out into Tears again, and cri- most vehemently, and still impatient upon ery little noise she heard in the House, to ow if her Husband was come Home.

Her Husband had born all her Taunts with utmost Patience as aboveſaid, and had not thdrawn at last, but that he found himself ved by her talking irreligiously and profane- ; when fearing he should fly out into a Passion o, and so give her any indecent Language *as did him*, and which he thought himself oblig- to avoid, *he withdrew.*

He was however not only surprized, but ex- mly afflicted at this Treatment, and not only

at

at this as an Accident; but at the ſad Pro
pect of what he was to expect from the Co
tinuance both of her Conduct of her ſe
Abroad, which began to be publick, and
the Treatment he was to have from her
Home.

However as the beſt and immediate Remed
for the diſorder of his Paſſions, he went i
mediately into his Cloſet and prayed earneſtl
to G O D for a patient ſubmiſſive Frame
himſelf to all his Providences, that he migh
not lay any Streſs upon the Inſtrument, b
view the Meaning and Deſign of ſovereign Goo
neſs in all thoſe things, *not forgetting* to Pra
very ſincerely for his Wife, That G O
would open her Eyes, and convince her of h
Sin, and bring her Home to himſelf, by a tr
Repentance and Reformation.

This brought him to a perfect Compoſure
Mind, when after ſometime ſpent thus, he we
out, and took a Walk in ſome Fields behi
his Houſe, where his Wife afterwards as
noted above ſaw him from her Chamber W
dow, but before the Meſſenger ſhe ſent ca
thither he was gone, having walked into the Cit
and as he went, accidentally met with his Wif
Father, and going to take a Glaſs of Wine
gether, the following Diſcourſe followed b
tween them.

Fa. Well *Son*, I hear you are gone to Hou
keeping, I give you joy of your Settlemen
how does all your Family?

Son, We ſhould do all much better, if w
h

had your Bleſſing Sir, and might have ſome of your Company.

Fa. Indeed *Son* you have my Bleſſing, and good wiſhes very heartily, I have no other Reason.

Son, I thank you for it ſo far Sir, but we are without it in a Family Way, which is what I long to have over, is there no Way Sir to obtain your Pardon.

Fa. GOD has not obliged us to Pardon Offences that are never acknowledged, *Son.*

Son, Sir your Daughter and I are *one* now, be pleaſed to accept my Acknowledgment for her, I do moſt freely own ſhe has been in the Wrong in every Part. and I'll beg you Pardon for her on my Knees.

Fa. If you will ſay *ſhe deſires you to do ſo*, I'll Grant it at firſt Word, and abate your Ceremony of Kneeling.

Son, I wiſh I could ſay ſo Sir *honeſtly*, but dare not ſay ſo, unleſs it were true.

Fa. I know that very well, and therefore I put it upon your bare ſaying it.

Son, It is my great Grief, That it is not ſo much ſo, as I would have it, but can you abate nothing *Sir* ?

Fa. Nay Son *I'll leave it to you*, is it meet I ſhould come and ſay *Daughter I am in the Wrong, I ought not to have reformed my Family*; *or if I had, I ought not to have expected you or your Brother ſhould have complied with it*: and *therefore you have been in the Right, and I am very ſorry it has gone ſo far, pray come and ſee me.*

Son

Son, *No Sir*, I never so much as thought you were in the Wrong, *nor do I say* but my Wife ought to come and acknowledge her Fault and ask you Pardon, *but she has had ill advisers*; if I had influence enough on her, to prevail, she should neither Eat nor Sleep, till, she asked you Pardon in the humblest manner possible.

Fa. For your Sake *Son*, and to let you see how willing I am to heal a Family Breach, *if she will send me Word by you*, That she acknowledges she has failed in her Duty, and desires me to be reconciled to her, I'll come to your House and see her to morrow.

Son, *It is my Grief Sir*, That I cannot promise for her, that she should comply with what is so Reasonable, and so kind; I acknowledge *Sir* you cannot ask less.

Fa. Nay *I do not expect it*, I know she won't do it; did she not refuse so much as to see me when she had no Reason, but to think she was upon her Death Bed.

Son, *I am sorry to own to you Sir*, That I have not interest enough in her to prevail for what is so just, and so much her Duty; *it is my Affliction*, I did not think she would have stood out so long.

Fa. I do not expect it of you *Son*, I know her; I wish you could prevail with her, upon some other Accounts, she manages her self very strangly, *as I hear.*

Son, I hope time may shew her the Mistakes she commits; they are not of any great Consequence, *she will be wiser Sir*, with a little more

more Experience.

Fa. But in the mean Time she ruins her Reputation, and may Ruin your Estate; For she goes so much Abroad, she is very seldom at Home; and more than that, I hear *She Plays.*

Son, I have no doubt at all of her Virtue; tho' she may Err in her Prudence *Sir,* and that makes me say I hope a little Time will Rectify it all, and as to *Play,* she does not Play *high.*

Fa. Why Son, I hear she lost 50 l. at Sir Anthony's a few Nights ago, I wonder you will let her go there, I forbad her that House, when she was a Maid, nay her Brother, *give him his due,* blamed her for going there; he is the Rakishest Fellow in the Town, and his Sisters, who she used to visit are no better than they should be; I would have you for her Sake as well as your own perswade her against it.

Son, Alas Sir she is not to be perswaded by me to Things of less Consequence than that!

Fa. Then you must restrain her.

Son, That is a Task I am no way qualified for, any farther, than the Violence of Intreaties and Perswasions will have any Effect.

Fa. Why then a Wife may Ruin her self and you too, I thought you had been fitter to make a Husband than that comes too, why it is not ill useing a Wife, it is Love to her, to Restrain her from ruining her own Reputation

sand your Estate; do you think I would per-
wade you to use her ill, tho she has not be
haved well to me, she is my Daughter, and
was once my best beloved Daughter; nay I
love her very well still, and I would not have
my Scores paid that way.

Son, Truly Sir if that be required of a Hus
band, *I am not fit for a Husband*; and a
to ruining me *indeed*, if my Wife will Ruin
me, *I may be ruined*; for I can never frame
my Temper to use any Violence or Restrain
with her; besides, her Temper is such, She
would set all the House in a Flame, and ex
pose her self to all the World.

Fa. Pray what said she to you for losein
50. l. at Play, I hear you paid it for her.

Son, No Sir I would not dishonour her
much, I gave it her immediately to pay fo
her self, she said of her own Accord, She wa
in the wrong, and she would Play no more
but I wish she would lose 500 l. tho' I pai
it this very Night, so she might but be pr
vailed with to leave it off.

Fa. I hear she behaves very ill to you
Home too.

Son, *No no Sir*, I do not complain of her
she would be a very good Wife to me Si
if I could perswade her to leave off keep
ing Company with two or three Families
and I hope in Time she will be tired
them.

Fa. I cannot but be glad that I fairly to
you all I feared of her, *before you had her*, yo
have nothing to blame me for.

Son, Sir I blame no Body, she is a very good Wife.

Fa. Well, you are kind to her, but I blame her extremly, and it is a Grief to me, That any thing out of my Family should behave her self so, I am sensible how obliging you have carried it to her, *and do still*, and how tenderly you use her, and I wanted an Occasion to tell you, that tho' she has not Grace to make you a suitable Return for it, *I shall never forget it*, nor I hope forget to Reward it.

Son, Sir you lay too much Stress upon what is nothing but my Duty, and what she very well deserves, for *give her her due*, when she is not prejudic't by her Passions which are hasty, and which hurry her too violently after the Gayeties of the Town and the Company she is fond of; she is of the most engaging Temper in the World, and no Man that has any Sense or Affection can be unkind to her; I may have Faults of my Side, and I should think it hard she would not bear with them, and I see nothing in her but I can bear with, and wait patiently for the return of her Temper, *nothing afflicts me so much in her*, as to see her so entirely empty of any Thing that is Religious, that she will hardly bear with our Family Order, and the common Worship of GOD, but as that must be wrought by the immediate Hand of G O D, I hope still it will come in G O D's due Time, she wants no Sence of things, nor Knowledge of what is our natural Duty, either to G O D, or one another.

Fa. Well Son, you have more hopes of her than I have *I assure you*, and I cannot but say if any thing on Earth can bring her to a Sence of her Duty, either to GOD or Man, it must be such a winning obliging Carriage as she receives from you; if that will not Work on her, she must be the ungratefulest Creature on Earth; considering in what Circumstances you took her, and that you have had her three Year without having had a penny with her.

Son, Sir as I told her before I married her, I would never ask any Thing of you on that Account, till I had if possible brought her and you to be reconciled, so I have been as good as my Word, and I am sure she has suffered no inconveniency on that Account.

Fa. But I shall not be so unjust to you as to let you suffer on that Account, and therefore *tho I cannot receive her as a Daughter*, Yet I shall always value you, and treat you as a Son, *nay as my own Son*, and tho' for her I would not disburse a Shilling, yet I have resolved, *and have wanted an Oppertunity to tell you*, That I will give you for your own Sake, *not for hers*, as much as I would have given her, if she had never disobliged me, and if you are willing to have it settled on either or both your Children; I will do it when you please.

Son, *It is more Sir than I can ask*, and therefore it shall be settled as you shall think fit; I hope my Wife will think her self obliged to thank you Sir as well as I.

Fa.

Fa. I do not expect or Regard her thanks, while she stands out against her Duty, neither is the Submission I have insisted upon, any Ceremony that I want with respect to my self other than it is a Debt due to the World, in Acknowledgment of her Duty to GOD and her Parents; but as I had never withheld her Portion, but in Expectation, That *some Time or other*, she would have complied, and ha come to her self, so I will make no Advantage of the Delay, but you shall have the interest of it from the Day of her Marriage, and *as I say this is done to oblige you*, and as an Acknowledgment of your extraordinary Behaviour to my Daughter, so you shall not take it ill that I desire her to take Notice, I will not now accept of her Submission, or be any ways concerned with her, or for her upon any Account whatsoever.

Son, As the goodness you are pleased to express to me, is more than I have Merit to Balance, or Reason to expect, so I beg you would not let your Kindness to me be clogg'd with any farther Severity to my Wife; for since our good or evil being in this World, is inseperable, this would be laying a Load on me at the same Time that you are obliging me in the highest Manner possible; nay this would be an unspeakable Grief to me, since all the Prospect of Happiness I have in this World, consists in the hopes I have of one Day making up this wretched Breach to the Comfort and Satisfaction of us all.

Fa. Well, however you may deliver this as

a Message to your Wife from me only, noting for your own private Satisfaction, That I do not make this with the same unalterable Resolution, as I have the other.

Son, Then Sir I entreat you let not me be the Messenger of any Thing to my Wife, that I know will grieve her.

Fa. If the Absence from her Father had been any Grief to her, she would ill have Born it out so long, I cannot suppose it any Grief to her.

Son, But Sir I have many Reasons to believe *it is a Grief to her*, and many more to hope that it will be much more a Grief to her than it is, when GOD shall be pleased to show her, both the Sin of what is past and what is her Duty for Time to come which Time I earnestly Pray for, and not without hope; and Sir, as I shall always make it my Endeavour to convince her how much 'tis her Duty to acknowledge her Offence both to GOD and her Father, and humbly to ask Pardon of both; I beg you would not put a silencing Argument in her Mouth to Answer my Entreaties and Perswasions with, by saying to me, *don't you know it is too late*, and *has not my Father said if I do submit my self to him now, he will not accept me.* If GOD should say so at the same Time, Sir she would be undone; and the having you say so *on the one Hand*, may tempt her to dispair of God's Mercy *on the other*, and to make that Conviction, which I hope shall be her Mercy, *whenever it comes*, be her Ruin.

Fa

The Father Embraces him

Fa. Dear Son, You are fitter to be Father than I am, I am fully answered by your Arguments, nothing can be more engaging than the Affection you discover *for a Wife*, That I doubt never deserved it from you; and *I believe never will*, I will forbear the Message, say to her *then* what ever you will, and what ever G O D shall direct you, in order to bring her to her Duty; you give me some hopes that G O D will yet be merciful to her, in that he has fixed such a Concern for her good in one, so capable of being a prevailing Instrument with her; I pray G O D bless your Counsel, to her good.

(They part, and the young Gentleman goes Home to his Wife.

His Wife had impatiently waited for his Return; her Passion was entirely over, and her Affection to her Husband acting now as violently the other Way: She had afflicted her self exceedingly at his not coming Home: in so much, That her Grief put her very much out of Order, and she had thrown her self down upon a Couch in her Chamber, but had ordered her Servants to call her as soon as their Master came in.

As soon as he came in, *which was later than his usual Time*, and upon enquiring for his Wife, was told by the Servants, That she was very ill, he ran directly up Stairs into

her Chamber before any Body could give her Notice of his being come, *but she* who listened too attentivly to want any Messenger heard him coming up Stairs, and rising hastily of the Couch, she ran to the top of the Stairs to him, and taking him violently in her Arms, *My dear* says she, *Forgive me*, That *I have ungratefully insulted, and basely provoked the tenderest Husband, and the best Temper in the World*. Tears choked her Words, and she could say no more, and having risen up and ran cross the Room too hastily, the Violence of that Motion, and of her own Passions overcame her: and she fainted at his Foot.

He called out for help, and the Servants running in, she was carried back to her Chamber, and in some short time she came to her self again, but finding her Husband sitting by her and very Anxious for her, it renewed her grief, and made her for some Time unable to express her self freely.

When she was entirely recovered, and fit to Converse, *she ordered all the Servants to withdraw*; and then with Abundance of Tears she acknowledged *to him* how sensible she was, That she had used him ill; and that she had not behaved her self as became her, in none of her Carriage to him; how afflicted she had been at his Absence so long, believing that she had exasperated him, and grieved him, and in short assured him, she would endeavour to make him amends by a quite different Behaviour to him, all her Life after.

The

The Grief he had conceived at her swooning away, and the surprize of it, together with the extreme of Joy he felt within himself at her declaring her Resolutions of altering her Conduct, caused him to speak little to her, except what he thought proper to Comfort her, till she prest him by often repeating such Questions, as these, *My dear do you forgive me* ? Are you not *Angry* ? Were you not *very Angry* ? and the like ; Which made him after some Pause, Answer thus,

Hus. My dear, I am not Angry, nay I was not Angry, I never knew what it was to be Angry with you, but I cannot say *I was not grieved*, and heartily afflicted, but you have abundantly made me amends, and *much more*, than I ever desired of you, for I can allow of no Submissions and Subjections between *you* and *I*, *but those of Love*, but you will add to my Satisfaction more than you are aware of, *or than I can Express*, if you will give me Leave to ask you *one Question.*

Wife, What is that *my dear*, I'll Answer you any Question you can ask, *as well as I can.*

Hus. How long *my dear* after I left you, was it before your Affections prevailed over your Passion to Work this blessed Change upon your Mind.

Wife, *My dear*, You were not gone a quarter of an Hour, before my Heart struck me, That I had been unkind to you, and I

ac

acknowledge that you had not deserved it at my Hands.

Hus. My dear, I am satisfied, fully satisfied! The Work is of G O D, to him shall be the Glory, and I will take it for a blessed Token that it shall not end here, *for his Works are all perfect*.

The Wife had no Guess at what he meant by this, and therefore made no Reply; but his Joy at her Answer proceeded from this, That he knew the Change was wrought in her that very Time; nay as near as he could Guess the very Moments that he, *as is noted before*, was earnestly Praying to G O D, not only to give him Patience to bear the Affliction, but in his own Time to open her Eyes to her Duty, convince her of her Sin, and bring her to a sincere Repentance, *vide Page* 382, and this was an unspeakable Comfort to him.

This affected him so much, That as soon as he could possibly leave his Wife, he retired to his Closet, and with great Thankfulness and Joy, gave Praises to the Divine Goodness for this Beginning of Mercy, not forgeting earnestly to Pray, That G O D would be pleased to carry on this Work, to a thorow awakening the Conscience of his Wife, and bringing her to a Sence of her Duty to G O D, and to a sincere Repentance for her former Errors, in which how he was heard, and how effectually he was answered, will appear in the following Part of this Work.

The

The Father of this Young Lady having as is said above, been discoursing with her Husband, when he parted he went Home where he found a Letter directed to his Daughter, and which had come inclosed in one to him from his *Son*, who had gone Abroad into the Army as is noted already. This Letter he immediatly sent away by a Servant to his Daughter, and it was brought to her just at that Time when her Husband was withdrawn as above, so that when he came back, he found his Wife all in Tears again; he began to comfort her, *thinking it was the Effect of the same Thing which had affected her before*, but she undeceived him by shewing him the Letter from her Brother; which was to this Purpose.

Dear Sister,

" While I had a Hand to Write to you, I too seldom paid you the Respect which my Affection and Duty to you required; and now I have neither a Hand to Write, or a Heart to Dictate; my last gave you an Account of my being wounded at the Seige of *Doway*, of which after some Time I was cured; tho' I lay all the Winter Sick at *Lisle*; now I am the miserablest Object in the World: I was taken Prisoner of War last Week, and am brought to this Place, having my Right Arm broken by a Musquet Ball, and to Morrow it must be cut off: *G O D is just Sister*, I cut off my

" my Father's *Right Arm as to his Family*,
" when I broke from him by Violence,
" and went Abroad against his Consent;
" now I lose my right Arm as a just Retaliation: I insulted my Father upon my having an Estate without him, now I must
" come a begging to my Father for Bread, or
" Perish in Misery; for my Estate is gone, and
" I am out of Comission: GOD *is*
" *just Sister*! he is *very just*! I hope you
" have begged my Father's Pardon, and
" obtained his Blessing; tho' I may never
" live to do it. I have Wrote to my Father
" for some Assistance, but have little Reason
" to expect it. *Adieu.*

Your dying Brother.

Cambray, . . . 1709.

The Grief of this surprising Letter, and the Concern she had been in before upon her Breach with her Husband, put her into such an Agony, That she spoke not a Word, but incessantly grieved and Wept, nor could the tenderest most Affectionate Expressions of her Husband, who never stirred from her procured a Word from her, all that Evening; she went to Bed indeed, but got no Sleep that Night, and the next Morning it threw her into a high Fever, which brought her to Death's Door, *as we call it*, and as it pleased

pleaſed G O D, That during the Violence of her Diſtemper, ſhe retained the perfect uſe of her Sences uninterrupted; ſo the Sence of her Danger awakened her to a Sence of her Duty, as will appear in the next Dialogue.

The End of the third Dialogue.

The

The Fourth Dialogue.

THE last Dialogue gave an Account of the Accident which had thrown the Young married Lady into a high Fever, and left her in a very weak Condition; her Husband as he was a tender affectionate Relation, and was in the utmost Concern and Affliction for her, seeing a great deal of Danger of her Life; so as he was a serious Christian, he could not be without inexpressible Anxieties for her future State, he had been backward to speak to her of death, or of any of the Perplexities which were upon him, for her Condition; least the Impression should be assistant to the disease, yet he thought it was his indispensible duty, not to be wanting to make her sensible of her danger as to her Soul's Condition; and especially as to the Breach with her Father, which he always acknowledged was unjustifiable, and a great Sin in her both against God and her Father.

While he was sitting mournfully by her, and his

his Heart oppreſt with the Struggle he had between his duty to tell her his thoughts, and his fear of injuring her Health by it; ſhe put an End to his Trouble of that kind, by beginning with him *thus*,

Wife, *My dear*, You ſee I am dying, but I cannot go out of the World without repeating my Acknowledgment to you, that I have not carried it to you as became me, or done either the duty of a Wife, or a Chriſtian, as to you in Particular; eſpecially your Kindneſs to me conſidered; and therefore I repeat my asking you pardon, *Forgive me my dear, and let me be aſſured you do it freely, for this is not a Time to Compliment me.*

Hus. My dear, I have been backward to ſpeak, becauſe I would not oppreſs, and diſcourage thee; but I cannot deny, that I fear thy danger is great, as for what troubles thy Mind about any Carriage to me, be as eaſy, as if we were not yet come together; I have not the leaſt regret, or reſentment in my Heart about it; it is all to me as if it had never been done.

Wife, Then ſay *you forgive me*, you muſt ſay ſo; ſay you forgive me, *my dear*.

Hus. If I did not ſay ſo plainly before, it was becauſe I would not call it an Offence, but ſince you will have me to call it ſo, *I do forgive* all that can be thought an Offence againſt me, with all the Freedom and joy I am capable of, *The L O R D forgive all our Offences againſt him.*

Wife, Then *my dear* I am ſatisfied, and thankful,

ful, and if God spare me farther Life, I'll make thee full amends if it be in my Power, if not *my request is*. Let it Answer all the reproaches that shall be cast upon me after I am gone, by telling the whole World, that I acknowledged it, and ask't you pardon.

Hus. My dear, Let it take up none of your thoughts, Matters of greater Moment are before thee; if thy Life is in danger, *as I fear*, I beg of thee *my dear*, look up to him that gives Life, and to whom *are the issues of Life and of Death.*

Wife, I have a sad prospect within! a guilty Soul, and a hardned heart.

Hus. But *there is Forgiveness with him, that he may be feared*, and he will *take away the Heart of Stone, and give a Heart of Flesh.*

Wife, But it is very late to ask it now! *very late*! a sick Bed is an ill Time to repent in! when the Body is burdened with the Force of a disease, the Soul oppress with a fearful View of Eternity! and the Sences seldom free to Act their Part.

Hus. My dear, but tho' it be *very late*, it is never *too late*; powerful Grace is not restrained to Time, or limited by Circumstances; one relenting thought, sincerly cast up to *Heaven*, one hearty Wish, one returning Sigh, can reach *Heaven*, be not afraid to cast thy Soul at his Feet; whose *Nature and Property is, ever to have Mercy, and to forgive.*

Wife, *I cannot say* That it is not too late.

Hus. Remember then the Words of our blessed

sed Saviour himself, *be not afraid, only believe*. *My dear*, shall I desire the Minister to make thee a Visit, and to Pray with thee, it may be G O D may direct him to speak something to thy comfort.

Wife, *No my dear*, Those Prayers of thine which I have made my Jest, shall be now my only Comfort! and as *G O D is just*, in bringing me to want thy Prayers, which I too much slighted, so *He is good*, and may be pleased to do me good by the Means that I so wickedly contemned, that others may know the Duty of so dear a Relation as Husband and Wife; and I may *if I should live*, know how to value them for the future! *will you pray with me my dear*?

Hus. As well as my Grief will permit me *my dear*, I will with all my Heart.

Upon her earnest Request her Husband prayed with her, and she seemed so affected with *the Confession of Sin*, which he made to be as it were the Introductory Part of his Prayer, that from that Time forward, he entertained great hopes of her being a true Penitent.

He avoided being long in Respect of her Weakness, but as he was never from her, either Night or Day, she caused him to Pray with her almost every two Hours, and sometimes would break out in short ejaculatory Prayers for her self; in which he could perceive, mingled with deep Humiliation and Confession; plain Appearances of her having more hope of her future State, than before.

Her Husband encouraged by this, in one o his Prayers making Confession of Sin, he men tioned something of the Errors and Mistake of Youth, which we are hurried into by th Violence of our Passions, and the violent Af fection with which we entertain our Pleasure and Vanities; and then went on to speak o the Sin of rejecting the Council of our Instru ctors, and refusing to stoop to the just Re proofs of those, who we are committed to by th Consequence of our Relation to, or depen dance upon them; and who it is our Dut to submit to; thus proceeding to point out *tho' gently*, the Sin she had been guilty of, i resisting the Admonitions of her Parents; im ploring G O D's Pardon for it, and tha her Eyes might be opened, to see and acknow ledge it.

As soon as this Prayer was over, she turn ed her self towards him, *and reaching out he Hands to him*, she embrac't him with grea Passion and earnestness, as her Strength woul permit; *my dear* said she, I bless G O D for what he has put into thy Heart to say up on that Subject; I am convinc't I have sin ned greatly in that Matter of my Father, *am convinc't, I am convinc t*, repeating the Word several Times with very great earnestness, an abundance of Tears.

Her Husband told her, he was very glad t hear her say so much; That it had laye much upon his Mind, to Mention it to her, *bu that he was loath to grieve her*, but he hope tha

that as GOD had been pleased to make her sensible of the Evil of it, so he would *as of old in the Case of the great Penitent David*, no sooner give her a Resolution to confess the Sin, but add the Comfort of his Pardon: *I said, I will confess my Transgression unto the LORD, and thou forgavest the Iniquity of my Sin.*

She look't up with a kind of a Smile at these Words, and said GOD will forgive me *my dear*, tho' my Father won't; at which her Husband said *my dear*, if GOD forgive us, it is not so much to us, if others do not; but I dare say if thy *Father* heard thee, he would not wait for any farther Acknowledgment, shall I let him know it said her Husband, I know his Heart mourns for thee: *my dear* said she, I am in an ill Condition to ask him Forgiveness now, but *if he was here*, I would do it as well as I could with all my Heart, and here her Tears again interrupting her, she said no more

Her Husband who saw it was not proper to say much more to her at that Time, her Distemper being violent, so he withdrew, being secretly pleased to hear her speak with so much Earnestness and Concern about her Father; and immediately sent a Servant to her Father, with a Letter to tell him, he desired to see him in the Morning; and withal wrote some Account of the Occasion; the Father tho' he took the News of her illness very heavily, for he still loved her very tenderly; yet received this part of the Account with great

Satisfaction, and came early in the Morning to the Houſe, where his Son in Law gave him an Account of all the Particulars of his Wife's Diſcourſe.

But it was too late, for her Feaver had encreaſed upon her with ſo much Violence in the Night; That when her Father came into the Room, She was ſpeechleſs; and to all outward Appearance, at the very Point of Death.

Her Husband tho' paſſionately afflicted at ſo ſad a Sight, yet willing to give her all the Conſolation he could, ſpoke cloſe to her Ear, That her Father was come, but ſhe did not ſeem to take any Notice of it; he repeated it adding he was come to give her his Bleſſing, and aſſure her that he had forgiven all the Breach between them; at which Words ſhe opened her Eyes, and look't at her Father, but cloſed them immediately, and remained ſpeechleſs; *my dear!* ſaid her Husband *give us a Sign if you underſtand us, would you have your Father forgive you?* at which ſhe lifted up her Hand; *and pray for thee,* ſaid her Husband! at which ſhe lifted up her Hand again, and juſt opened her Eyes, *but could not ſpeak.*

This was a melancholy Sight, for two ſuch near Relations to bear, nor did it afford any Thing more, that ſerves to our preſent Purpoſe The Father prayed by her Bed ſide, and gave GOD Thanks for any Appearances of Mercy to her Soul; and committing her into the Hands of her Redeemer: they retired

tired, expecting her departing every Moment.

But Providence had otherwise determined it, or tho' she lay in that Condition two or three Days, yet it pleased G O D, *after that*, the Feaver seemed to abate, and she came to her speech again, and in a few Days more grew better, tho' so very Weak, as made her Recovery be very slow.

Now a new Care and Anxiety seized upon her Husband, who tho' truly joyful at the Hopes he had of his Wife's Recovery, which few Days before there was no Room to expect. Yet he could not but be fearful, least her Convictions should wear off with a Sence of her Danger, *as is usual in the Case of Death Bed Repentance*; and that *the Prospect of Death's disappearing*, her Love of Vanity and Pleasure should Return with her Health; and therefore *like one that truly loved her Soul's Advantage, as well as her personal Welfare*; he began early to put her in mind of the Debt she owed to the goodness of G O D; which seemed to be giving her a new Life: and to whom the Hours he should now bestow ought to be dedicated, as given for that Purpose; his often repeating these things, gave Occasion to the following Discourse, which tho' it suffered several Intermissions from her Weakness, yet it being all to the same Purpose, will be very well Read as one continued Dialogue; She began with her Husband upon the Occasion *as I have noted*, of his often repeating his Cautions against forgetting after her

Recovering, the Sence she had upon her Mind of her State when she was in Expectation of Death.

Wife, *My dear* says she, I see what you are afraid of, You fear I shall forget GOD's Goodness to me, as soon as I am Recovered.

Hus. I hope *my dear*, you cannot forget neither what you *are*, or what you *were*.

Wife, But I see plainly you are Anxious about it.

Hus. My dear, do not take it ill; *we are not Ignorant of Satan's Devices*: our *Adversary the Devil, like a roaring Lyon goes about seeking whom he may devour*. And we are too subject to forget the vows of our afflicted Condition; I am no otherwise afraid for thee, than as we are all apt to do so.

Wife, But has he not *snatched me as a Brand out of the Fire! Zech.* 3. 2.

Hus. It is very true *my dear*.

Wife, Has he not *ransomed me from the Power of the Grave! Hos.* 13, 14.

Hus. He has I hope ransomed thy Soul too.

Wife, Has not *my Soul been Precious in his Sight! Sam*, 26, 24.

Hus. May God keep the Remembrance of it always upon thy Mind *my dear*.

Wife, I am assured he will do so.

She breaks out in an Extacy of Thankfulness, and Repeats the 2, 3d, 4th, Verses of the 103 Psalm. *Bless the Lord*

Lord O my Soul, and forget not all his Benefits, Who forgiveth all thine Iniquities. Who healeth all thy Diseases. Who redeemeth thy Life from Destruction. Who crowneth thee with loving Kindnesses and tender Mercies.

Hus Let me join *my dear* said her Husband Psalm 86, 2, 3, 4, 5. O thou my God, save thy Servant that trusteth in thee, be merciful unto me O Lord; for I cry unto thee daily; For thou O Lord art good and ready to forgive, and Plenteous in Mercy to them that call upon thee.

Wife, Psalm 88, 9, 10. LORD, I have called daily upon thee, I have stretched out my Hands unto thee; Wilt thou shew Wonders to the Dead! Shall the Dead arise and Praise thee!

Hus. My dear, I will be an Eccho to all Breathings of this Kind, Psalm 92, 12. It is a good Thing to give Thanks unto the Lord; and to sing Praises to thy Name, O most High! to shew Forth thy Loving Kindness in the Morning, and thy Faithfulness every Night!

Wife, Psalm 102, 11, 24. I said O my GOD, take me not away in the midst of my Days.

My Days are like a Shadow that declineth, and I am withered like Grass. Psalm 116, 1, 2, 3. I love the LORD, because he hath heard my Voice, and my Supplication; because he hath inclined his Ear unto me; Therefore will I Call upon him as long as I Live.

Hus. The LORD upholdeth all that Fall, and raiseth up all those that are bowed down, he will fulfil the Desire of them that Fear him: he also will hear their Cry, and will save them. The Lord is nigh unto all them that Call upon him. To all them that Call upon him in Truth.

They continued thus in this blessed extacy of Praising and giving Thanks to God for some Time every day; and when ever he came into the Chamber to see her, he came always with some comforting Text of Scripture in his Mouth which he had found out while he had been Absent, and this way of Conversation between them, lasted till she was thorow well, when being come down Stairs, and beginning to take upon her again the Affairs of her Family, after having been at Church to render more solemnly her Thanks to God in Publick, for her Recovery; She called her husband to her, and began this short discourse with him.

Wife, *My dear*, Now God has been pleased to give me a new Life; and restore me to thee, and to my Family. It is my Part to testify my Thankfulness to his Goodness, by a new Way of Living; and therefore I wish you would begin with a solemn giving Thanks in the Family, at your usual Time of Family Worship.

Hus. With all my Heart my dear.

Wife, You shall see *my dear*, I shall no more discountenance the Service and Worship of GOD in my Family, as I formerly did, to my Shame be it spoken.

Hus

Hus. Do not Mention that any more, *my dear*, I hope 'tis forgotten above! *He remembreth our Sins no more*, and it is meet it should be forgotten with me.

Wife, But I shall never forget to Mention it with Shame and Reproaches upon my self, as long as I Live! and therefore it is, That I desire to be now the first to promote and forward that blessed Work, which I was so much the hinderance of before.

Hus. I rejoice *my dear*, at the Encouragement you will give to our doing the Duty of our Station, but the bare performance of a Course of Worship, is the meanest Part of what is required. Our whole Lives must be squared according to those Rules, which GOD has set us to walk by, That we may adorn the Profession we make of Religion, and *walk in the Commandments and Ordinances of God blameless*, Luke 1, 6.

Wife My dear, I am not supposing that the Form of our Duty is the Substance of it, but as *it is true*, that there may be the outward Performance without the Heart, yet it *is as true*, That where the heart is engaged, there will be no Omission of the outward performance, and therefore I first thought my self obliged to give you this Assurance of my willingness to comply with the outward performance, and the rather because of what is past.

Hus. My dear. Let us have no more Reflections on what is past between us, the re-

mem

membrance of it, is with great Satisfaction buried with me.

Wife, But *my dear* you must allow me to look back with regret, and keep it always in my View; I shall endeavour to remember you of it no otherwise, than by shewing you the Reverse of it in my future Behaviour.

Hus. That shall be a Remembrance, That will issue only in *Praises*, and Thankfulness to GOD's infinite Goodness, and in an increase *if that be possible*, of my Affection to, and delight in thee while I live.

Wife, First then *my dear* be satisfied and assured, I have intirely done with the Follies of my Former Life; and that I shall throw away no more time at the *Play house*, or in Gaming, those Thieves of the Affections, and prodigal wasters of Time, which time I have learnt to know the Value of, at the Appearence of Death, and hope I have now been furnish't with Knowledge from Experience, how to imploy to better Advantage.

[He Embraces her with Tears of Joy running down his Cheeks.

Hus. God of his infinite Mercy support those Resolutions.

Wife, *My dear*, why do you shew a Concern at it? why those Tears!

Hus. They are Tears of Joy *my dear*, Tears proceeding from a Satisfaction otherwise inexpres

preſſible.

Wife, Are they not mingled with ſome doubt, and proceeding from ſome Fear, that I ſhall break in again upon theſe Reſolutions, as I have often Times done before, and as many Peo ple do after their death Bed Aſtoniſtments are over?

Hus. No *my dear*, I hope that GOD in whoſe Strength you have made theſe Vows, will give you Grace and Strength to keep them.

Wife, My dear theſe Thoughts of mine are not digeſted into formal Vows and Prote ſtations, things *which often being made in our own Strength*, we are juſtly forſaken by the Divine Aſſiſtance in, and are left to break and fall from; relapſing with greater Violence in to the very Sins, we in that manner abjure. But I find my Heart ſo fully convinc't of the Folly and Vanity of thoſe Diverſions, the un: ſatisfying uninſtructing Pleaſure of them; the Expence of thoſe unvaluable Moments in them, which at Death we would give Millions to retrieve, and the many other attending Snares, they are inſeparable from; that I look on them with the utmoſt Deteſtation, and Re-proach my ſelf with the greateſt Admira-tion at the Influence which thoſe things had upon me.

Hus. My dear this is a greater Aſſurance to me of the Stability of thy Reſolutions than a thouſand formal Oaths and Vows againſt them; which as you well obſerve, *being often made in our own Strength*, , God is pleaſed

ſo

for our Mortification, to leave us to break; and which also the devil never gives over soliciting us to forget and undervalue.

Wife, Well *my dear*, I hope I shall never alter my Sentiments of these things; and you may I hope depend upon it, That neither the Practice it self, or the Company that used to make those things delightful to me, will ever be tolerable to me again.

Hus. My dear, you must be civil to your Acquaintance.

Wife, Truly it will be with difficulty, that I shall be so *to some of them*; and I shall miss no Occasion of wearing out the Acquaintance with them, especially that of *Sir Anthony* and my Lady *Lighthead*.

Hus. I believe *my dear*, their Company can be little diversion to you, I cannot think they ever really were; they have so little in them, I think it was impossible.

Wife, They have been Engines in the hand of the devil to do me mischief, and to make me run *a dreadful Length* in my own Ruin, both Soul and Body.

Hus. It must be be by meer drollery and Mimick then; for they have neither of them any such thing as solid Wit, or agreable Behaviour.

Wife, It has been by that bewitching Thing called Gallantry and honour, by which *my Lady especially* as it were, bantered me out of a Sence of all Kind of duty, either to God or Man; made me think it below me to Regard relative Obligations, and ungentile to be bound

by

by the duties either of a Child to my Father or of a Wife to my husband

Hus. She has done thee no harm in the M in I hope.

Wife, She has employed me *my dear,* these five Year in diligently laying up a vast Stock for Repentance, and making Work for Tears and Reproaches as long as I live.

Hus. Those things often end worse *my dear,* I fear they will end worse with them.

Wife, If the End is any Thing with me, but Ruin of Soul and Body, it must be the Effect of infinite Mercy, and the free Grace of God.

Hus. And is not that a blessed Fruit.

Wife. But in the mean Time it is a Fountain of secret Regret; self Abhorrence, constant Reproaches, and Sighs that break the very Soul; This is *the Fruit* I have *of those Things whereof I am now ashamed.*

Hus. A blessed Fruit it is, however in the End. (*viz.*) *The peaceable Fruit of Righteousness, to the saving of the Soul.*

Wife, But what Mortification! What Regret! What havock has it made in my Soul! here I have been an undutiful Child! a Terror to my Relations! a Grief to my Father and Mother! The Ruin of my Brother!

[Tears stopt her Speech
[for a while at the Mention
[of her Brother.

Hu

Hus. Do not Mention that now my dear.

Wife, Not Mention it! Yes I must mention it! he is undone! and I was Partner with him in his Sin! Nay I was worse than he! Why God has ruined him, and spared me! I was a rebel to my Father, I have been a Traitor to thee *my dear*, and above all, a forsaker of God, and a despiser of Religion! and all that was good! and why am not I destroyed, rather than my dear Brother!

Hus. But God that gives Repentance, gives also Pardon! And blessed be God thou art now rejoicing in hope!

Wife, Ay *my dear*, But what Work is here for Repentance not towards God only, but to every one else! I have ask't Forgiveness of thee *my dear*, and I ought to do it to my Brother, and of my Father, and they ought all to refuse me.

Hus. But I am sure we are all too glad of the Occasion to entertain such a Thought; where God is pleased to Pardon, *Who is Man*? That he should resent! I dare say thy Father *forgives thee freely*.

Wife, *Well*, whether he will or no, it is my Duty to acknowledge my Fault to him.

Hus. My dear, thou hast done it already, and he is satisfied, he will be here to Visit us to Night.

Wife, But that is not sufficient to me.

Hus. Here thy Fathers comes already.

[*Her Father knocks at the*
[*Door, and comes in, She run*

[*to him, falls on her Knees*
[and cried *my dear Fa-*
[*ther*, but fainted, *and*
[*could not speak a Word*
[*more, and continued so till*
[*afterward, that she was*
[*obliged to*

be carried to Bed: but after she had lain some Time, and was a Little refreshed, she desired her Father and husband to come up into her Chamber, while she lay indisposed on her Bed: her husband related to her Father all the discourse that had passed between them, which so affected her Father, That he could not bear giving her the Uneasiness of farther Confessions; and therefore when she sent for them up, the Father spoke to her husband thus " Son I desire " you will go up first, and tell her, *Word for* " *Word*, what I say to you, as near as you can " remember.

" First, tell her you have related to me the " discourse that was between her and you, and " that I am fully satisfied with, and rejoice in " the Acknowledgment she has made of her " former Carriage to me, and of her design to " acknowledge it farther; That I already " think it more than enough, that as neither " her Weakness *on the one Hand*, can bear it " so neither can my Affection to her bear any " more Submissions: and therefore I will not " come up to her, unless she will promise you " not to speak one Word to me of it more; " but only hear what I shall say to her, and " so put an intire End to it.

Her

Her husband did so, and with much difficulty prevailed with her to Promise, upon which her Father being brought in, went to her, *and kist her* as she lay, and praying earnestly in few words to God to bless her, and continue his Goodness to her; he comforted her in the following Manner.

" *My dear Child*, said he, I have Acknow
" ledgments enough, and am fully satisfied, my
" Jou and Satisfaction is, That God has given
" you a due and deep Sence of your Offences
" *against him*, and I hope has pardoned you also:
" your Offence against me is nothing, but *as it*
" *was* a sin against him, nor had I ever any other
" Resentment of it, but what my common Af-
" fection could have prevailed over, I rejoice
" that God has given you Repentance, and I
" think it as much my duty to forgive you, as
" I did before *not to do it*, till you had acknow
" ledged it; therefore I freely and heartily
" forgive you, as if you had never offended me,
" and I make but this one Condition of my for
" giveness, which I oblige you to comply with,
" (*viz.*) That you say not one Word more
" by Way of asking Pardon, for as you
" can not bear to do it, so neither can I to hear
" it.

" She kept her Word as to speaking, but abundance of Tears testified how sensible she was of what her Father has said to her, and thus an entire Reconciliation was made of all that was past: and she proved ever after, a sober religious shining Christian, a dutiful affectionate daughter to her Parents. A tender and obliging

obliging Wife to her Husband, and a careful inſtructing Mother to her Children.

The tragical Part of this Story remains, and will make the Concluſion of this Work. The Subject is, The miſerable wretched Caſe of the young Gentleman, the Brother to this Lady; and who had gone Abroad as has been ſaid, but was partly by his Wounds, Sickneſs, and Misfortune, but principally by his Vices and Extravagance, reduced to the laſt Extremity of Miſery; had waſted his Eſtate, ſold his Commiſſion, loſt one of his Arms, and was brought to the Neceſſity of Writing to his Father for Subſiſtance, and for Money to bring him over to England; of which the Particulars will appear in the next *Dialogue.*

The End of the fourth Dialogue.

The Fifth

Dialogue.

IN the last Dialogue you have some Account of the Condition the young Gentleman formerly mentioned was reduced to, in a Letter to his Sister, dated from *Cambray*: where he was under Cure of his Wounds.

It seems his Extravagance had reduced him to the last Extremity, and having had his Arm cut off, and falling into a long fit of Sickness after it; tho' he was exchanged by Virtue of the Cartel for Exchange of Prisoners, and so had his Freedom; yet he could not be removed, and was at last obliged to sell his Commission; after which, seeing himself reduced to great Extremities, and the utmost Misery, even of wanting Bread being in his View; he wrote a second Letter to his Father, which being brought by a Person, who gave a Particular Account of his Condition; moved his Father to take Compassion of him, and relieve him.

His

His Letter to his Father was thus,

SIR,

" As I have little Reason to expect any " Relief from you, so Duty ought to have " moved me not to have given you the Afflicti " on of knowing my Condition; perhaps how " ever while you may be moved with my Dis- " asters; it may be some Satisfaction to you " to see, That he who went away without " your Blessing, is brought to the Necessity " of seeking to you for his Bread; if it be your " Pleasure, That I shall Perish here in Misery " and Friendless, I am ready to submit to " the Sentence from your Mouth, as a just " Punishment; but if you have so much " Concern for my Life, as to Cause me to be " brought over, that I may dye in my native " Country; the Bearer will acquaint you, " how such undeserved Bounty will be received " by.

&c.

The tender compassionate Father, tho' he relented his Son's Treatment of him deeply enough, and steddily adhered to the Resolution of never receiving him into his Family, unless he acknowledged his first Crime, (*viz.*) Of withstanding the reformation of his Father's House; yet being by no Means obliged by that resolution, not to relieve him in Distress, or to let him Starve in a strange Country, having enquir

ed into the Particulars of his Circumstances, from the Gentleman who brought the *Letter*, and understanding by him that his Son was reduced to the utmost Distress; he immediately remitted Money over to a Dutch Merchant at *Lisle*, with Orders to give him present Subsistance, and to bring him from *Cambray* thither, in Order to his being sent over to England; all which the said Merchant effectually performed, and the poor reduced Gentleman arrived at *London* soon after.

It was the very same Day of his Arrival, when he caused his Father to have Notice that he was coming to lay himself at his Door; but the Father tho' he had relieved him, and designed to take Care that he should not want, yet judging it needful to let him know his *Resentments* had been very just; and that he was to be satisfied further, with relation to things past, before he could be restored to the State of an eldest Son, if ever that was to be done at all, gave him the Mortification of signifying to him by a Messenger, That he was not to be admitted to see his Father, or to come into his House yet; but that he was to go to such a Place, not far off, where a *Lodging* was provided for him.

This afflicted him extremely, and at first threw him into a violent Passion, expostulating with the Messenger in such Words as these, What! has my Father brought me thus far, but to Trample on my Misery, and to make his resentment sink the deeper; or has he brought me like a Criminal to the Place of

Ex

Execution ; thus *as he may think* to do Justice upon me ! why had he not suffered me to Perish where I was, rather than come hither to die with the more Affliction and *Reproach* ? The Messenger told him his Business was not to dispute with him, but to deliver his Message ; That he had no further Instructions. And so giving the Coach Man Directions where to go, he told the poor Gentleman, he would go before to receive him, and took his Leave.

The unhappy Gentleman bid the Coach Man go on; and in a little Time he found himself passing by his Father's Door ; this struck him with an inexpressible Grief, even into an Agony of Shame, Anger, and Despair ; when in that very Moment his Dream came to his Mind, which he had related to his Sister ; and which we have set down in the first Dialogue *of this Part.* (*viz.*) *How that having his Arm shot off, and being relieved by his Father Abroad, and brought over ; tho he came to his Father's Door, yet he would not take him in, but had ordered him to a Neighbour's House,* &c.

As soon as this revolved upon his Thoughts, " it immediately quieted him, and he broke " out into this Expression. *Well* ! now I see that " nothing befals us without the determinate " Will of that Sovereign Power that guides " and governs the whole World ; This was " so long ago represented to me in a Dream ; " how exactly is every Step of it come to

" pass upon me ! God is just ! and it is my " Part to submit.

This quieted his Mind for some Time, and he went on to the House which his Father had appointed him ; where he found the Servant who *as he had said* went before ; who helped him in, for he was so weak, he could hardly go, and coming into a Chamber provided for him, *fetching a deep Sigh*, he threw himself on the Bed, without speaking a Word ; and in this Condition he remained all that Night, and the next Day no Body coming near him, but the People of the House, who were directed to supply him with Necessaries.

In the Evening he heard a Coach stop at the Door, and soon after a Lady coming up Stairs who was brought into his Chamber, and who he presently knew to be his Sister ; she found him very Weak, sitting in a Chair by the Fire, leaning his Head upon his Hand and his Elbow on a Table that stood by him, his Eyes fixed on the Ground, his Countenance to the last degree dejected Pale and thin ; and in short as like a Spectacle as any Thing that was real Flesh and Blood could be supposed to be, when she came forward into the Room, he lifted up his Eyes, and said only this Word, *Sister* ! and would have risen up, but had not Strength ; She designed to have embraced him, but when she saw him, she was frighted and amazed, and sat down over against him at some Distance, being ready to swoon away. At first she could hardly be convinc't it was really her Brother, and when she was satisfied of that, the very

seing

seing him in that Condition, struck her with such Grief, That she could not speak a Word to him for a great while. Being recovered a little, *My dear Brother* ! said she, and would have gone on, but she burst out into Tears ; however these Transports which the Surprize of seing him in such a Condition, might very well be supposed to Work in so near a Relation, being a little over, they began to Discourse a little together, and after the usual Questions concerning his Health, and the proper Remedies to be used to recover his Strength *and the like* ; the following Dialogue containes the Substance of their Discourse.

Sister, *Dear Brother*, But what makes you so dejected ! and why have you lost your Courage so much at your Disasters ? I hope with taking Care of your self, and proper Remedies being used ; you may Recover. But if your Spirits are sunk, you will fall under the Weight of your own Melancholly, and be lost without Remedy.

Bro: *Dear Sister*, Not all my Disasters, not the loss of my Arm, not the cruel Operations of the Surgeons, not the having wasted my Estate, not my being reduced to want Bread. Not all that has befallen me, or that could befal me in the World ; has ever been able to sink my Spirits, and cast me so low, as this Part of my Tragedy.

Sister, What Part Brother !

Bro: Why that *my Father* who kindly reliev-

ed me when I wrote to him of my Distress; who ordered me to be brought Home *as I thought*, that according to my Request I might dye in my native Country; should in stead of that common Compassion; which Nature dictates to Men in Misery; bring me hither *but just as they do Malefactors*, to die with the more Shame; and not suffering me to come within his Doors, should send me hither, *as it were* to an Hospital, to be kept upon his Charity; like one who altho' he would not have starved, but not in Favour, but that he might die with the most exquisite Tortures of the Mind; which he could not but know such a Thing would procure, and must produce in a Soul that had any Sence of Misery left.

Sister, *You lay it too much to Heart* Brother, That is not my Father's Design.

Bro: *Yes! yes*! That is the Design! why else had he not ordered me to some Hospital, or Place of Retreat; where I need not ha' been a Spectacle to, and the Reproach of his Servants; and the Contempt of all my Acquaintance? but he shall have his full Satisfaction over me; and I will *as I dream't on*, cause my self to be carried to his Gate, That he may say he had the Pleasure to see his eldest Son Die at his Door.

Sister, Your Grief permits you not to make a right Judgment of things; I beg you will Weigh the Circumstances of every Part, and you will find *my Father* has quite other Designs towards you.

Bro. Why this Triumph then, over my Disasters?

ters ? it is impossible !

Sister, You cannot think so hardly of my *Father* : you should rather conclude, That his bringing you so near him, is in order to restoring you entirely, and a little Patience would give you Light in that Matter.

Bro. Has he so much as given me the least Intimation of it ; On the contrary, has he not brought me to pass by his very Door, and sent his Messengers to command me to come no nearer to him, nor himself so much as Vouchsafe to see me !

Sister, You should consider *Brother*, the Terms on which you stand with my Father ; with Respect to your going away, and the Obligation he is under of Expecting some Terms, before you are restored.

Bro. I know what you Mean *Sister* ; I could have made any Submissions, had he not brought me thus, *as it were upon a Stage*, to be a Spectacle to all People ; and make a private Breach become publick, by a scandalous Penance : Now I can never do it, tho' I were much more convinced of the Crime than I am : it is impossible ! no I cannot do it ! if I starve here !

Sister, *Dear Brother*, do not talk of that, you shall not starve, I have had too much Hand in your Miseries to suffer you to Starve, tho' my Father would ; but you will not find *my Father* enclines to any thing unkind : but *dear Brother* you are I hope too sensible of the Mistake we both committed, to be unwilling to give *my Father* that small Satisfaction he re-

requires; which is but a bare Acknowledgment of having done amiss. I have done it with the greatest Sincerity, and with the greatest Peace and Satisfaction to my self in the World, *to tell you true*, I had really no true Peace or Satisfaction till I did do it.

Bro: Well Sister, before I speak of that, let me observe to you, That your Words put me in Mind of my old Dream again; which you cannot but remember, I told you of at my Aunts; and it is fulfilled in every Part: for I am brought to my Father's very Door, and being refused Leave to come in, am sent hither to be kept as in an Hospital under Cure; and you only as I dream't come to visit me, and acknowledging your having submitted to my Father, perswaded me to the same; God is just *Sister*! God is just! and I have brought all this upon my self! but my Father is cruel, and Tyranizes over my Distress, and that I can not bear.

Sister, dear Brother, it is very wonderful, and I have often thought on that Dream, and of my Aunt's Prediction also, about the same time, (*viz.*) That you would be brought to want Bread, and to beg my *Father* to relieve you, tho' I was in hopes it would never ha' come to that Pass.

Bro: It is a Testimony that *nothing befals us* without an invisible Hand; I acknowledge his Justice; but I cannot but think, but my Father is very severe, and indeed very cruel.

Sister, That is, *because* you take the first part of this Affair, without the subsequent, which

is

s in his Design ; and which I hope will all End well still, if you can be perswaded to act with Temper and Patience.

Bro: That is upon Supposition *I perceive*, That my Condition will oblige me to make the utmost Submissions, meerly for want of Subsistance, whether I am sensible of the Crime or no.

Sister, dear Brother ! I hope you are sensible of it : if such Judgments as you have met with, cannot make you sensible, nothing will ! however as all your Dream is not come to pass, I shall fulfill the rest, by which besides my Respect to you, that Excuse shall be taken away, (*viz.*) That you are necessitated to make Submissions for Bread ; I hope you will do it from a meer Sence of the Sin, and of God's Anger and Justice, as well as of your Father's Displeasure : and that you may not be in a Necessity of doing it otherwise ; take *.*. that of your dream too, for yonr present Comfort, for you dream't I broaght you some Money.

[*She puts a Purse of Gold*
[*into his Hand.*

Bro. *dear Sister*, you are too kind, but I doubt I am past this kind of Consolation.

Sister, As you are reduced to want necessaries, you cannot be passed receiving some Satisfaction from a Supply.

Bro: If *with my Estate*, I had lost all Sence of Honour, were grown as low spirited, as I am

am low circumstanced, I might cringe and stoop as a Beggar at a door; but if my Father seeks to surprize the *Soul*, by the Afflictions of the Body, as it is more than cruel, *in him*; so it is insupportable to me, and I must deliver my self *Sister*.

Sister, If you had not at first disobliged him to the highest degree, you would ha' had reason in what you say; but if what my Father expects now be *no more* than he expected when you were in your best Circumstances, no more than you made the Condition of your Return, by receiving the Assurance of it, being the Consequence of your going away: & that even before you went, and at least *no more* than as a Parent and a Master of a Family he was obliged to do, to preserve that Authority which you and I unhappily opposed, then you cannot call his carrying it thus to you now, an imposing upon you, or insulting your Misery; *I know* it is not in his Nature to do so, if it had *Brother*, why did he Answer your Letters, send you Relief, be at the Expence of bringing you over, and providing for you here, has not his *Pity* saved your Life!

Bro. But is not this Way of giving Life worse than Death? I know how to deliver my self, he that dares die, knows how to Revenge him self of all the World.

Sister, That is talking more like a *Souldier Brother*, than a Christian: nay according to the Notions of *Philosophy*, which you and I used to talk of, it is talking like a Coward, not like a Man of Courage; since what they call *true Courage*, consists in sustaining the Mind,

under

under the most pressing Afflictions; and *passive valour* is the greatest extreme of true Magnaminity; whereas he that destroys himself is a Coward, and dies for fear of the bitterness of Life.

Bro: There are some Circumstances, which may overcome even humane Nature it self, and among these, to be insulted in Distress, is the most insupportable: I could die by Tortures with much more Ease.

Sister, But *dear Brother*, you put the falsest Construction imaginable upon your present Circumstances: my Father has put no Insult upon you, and means you none: you know the just Engagements he is under, binds him to what he does.

Bro: Is it no insult *Sister*! to bring me to his own Door, and then send a Servant to tell me, I must not be taken in, but go to such a Place!

Sister, Had there been nothing between you before, that makes that proceeding reasonable, it might ha' been thought hard, but you cannot but own *my Father* has been provoked.

Bro: You were of another Mind *once Sister.*

Sister, *Dear Brother*, I acknowledge with the greatest Affliction imaginable, That I was doubly unhappy in being so, that I was too much the wicked Instrument to encourage you in that Course, which has reduced you to this Misery, and it has cost me more Tears, than you can Imagine, to think that I that

loved

loved you so dearly, should have so much hand in your Ruin.

Bro: It has cost me more Blood, than it has cost you Tears.

Sister, That may be true too, but my Repentance has been severe enough.

Bro: And pray how has it issued? I wish you would give me the short History, that I may judge how to regulate my Conduct by yours.

Sister, I was your unhappy Pattern before, *I pray G G D extend the same Grace to you now*, that as we sinned together, we may be Witnesses together of our Repentance. My Case is thus,

Here she relates to him all her own Story, from her Marriage to her Reconciliation with her Father, as related in the Dialogues foregoing.

Bro: Your story is very remarkable! indeed your Husband's Conduct must be admired: but *dear Sister*, my Father did not deal with you, as he does with me; if he had, it would have fired your Spirits, and filled you with Indignation, rather than have engaged you to an Acknowledgment.

Sister, You misconstrue my Father's Intentions extremely.

Bro: What Misconstruction can it be? am I not here? was I not brought to his Door?

was I not shut out, and turned here after five Years Absence? has my Father or Mother, or any of the Family come, or so much as sent a Servant to see me?

Sister, Dear *Brother*, do not let your Passions be your Temptation: *I am come to see you.*

Bro: You are like your self, kind, and good: but what's this to them?

Sister, Are you supposing then *Brother*, That I came without my Father's Knowledge, *no Brother*, I came to Discourse with you, That you may be easy, and that my Father may have Room to Act what his own Compassionate Inclinations move him to: and to receive you with the same freedom and affection that he did me.

Bro: Then I am not to Treat with you now, *as my Sister*, but as an Ambassador, or a Mediator.

Sister, I entreat you *dear Brother*, let us be serious: because it is for your Life.

Bro: My Life! alas that is not worth a Treaty! I wish as it is in my Power, to give it, it were his to take it, you should see, I would die like his Son rather than be fed by his Charity.

Sister, *But Brother*, I am not treating with you on the Subject of Charity: I will protect you my self from the need of any one's Charity; but as the Foundation of this Breach was wrong, and as I hope you are now convinced of it, as well as I am; I would fain perswade you to a dutiful Accommodation with my

my Father, who is ready to abate you the Ceremony, if he can bnt have the reality of such a Repentance, as God and your Duty calls for: and that you may do this freely, and under no Pretence of being reduced to it, by your Circumstances, I brought you the Relief you have, nor shall you be suffered to want, let it go how it will.

Bro: *What would you have me do?*

Sister, Your own Sence will Dictate that to you.

Bro. I acknowledge I am very sorry I have given him Offence, and especially that I went away without bis Leave, methinks what I suffered for that Crime should be enough.

Sister, You may be sure I shall relate this with all the Advantage I can to my Father, but the Matter it self is so plain, the Message you might send, would as plainly put an End to it.

Bro: What plainer can I say?

Sister, Nay Brother you do not want me to Dictate.

Bro: You would have me say, I acknowledge I gave him just Cause for all he did, that I acted very wickedly, in opposing him in his Family Orders: and that I beg Pardon of him, and so fall down on my Knees, &c. dear Sister, if I should, I am such a Cripple, I cannot get up again.

Sister, *dear Brother*, I am sorry to see how it is with you; I see plainly it is not in your Heart; and all that is in Appearance, will be

be but from the Lip outward, what can I do!

Bro: I could have made any Submissions, if he had not brought me hither to do it in this Manner; but Death I think would be a much easier Portion to me now.

Sister, It is in vain for you and I to dispute it *Brother*, tell me then what shall I say for you, or what shall I do for you?

Bro: Say as above, which is the Truth, That I regret so much the usage of me at last; that I have nothing left to do, but to satisfy my Father that I will be as short a Burden to him as possible.

Sister, dear brother, I cannot carry such a Message, consider of something fit for me to say; and do not provoke him at last, when you are just casting your self upon him.

Bro: Tell him then, what your kindest thoughts to me can suggest; only not omitting to let him know, That the repulse I have met with here, is greater to me than all that has befallen me: That I was prepared to have asked him Pardon, and in general I will do so still; but that this has put me past all Temper: tell him just so, and let it issue as it will.

Sister, It is an uncomfortable Message for me to carry; but I must do as you bid me.

Bro: I cannot say less, without feigning a Temper; which if I should see my Father, I cannot make good, or Act over again, *for I*

cannot Counterfeit; and if I say more, you will not be willing to carry the Message therefore let it go so, come of it what will.

Sister, If I decline carrying any Message, it is for your sake; that I may not injure your Interest with my Father, and for no other Reason.

Bro: *I know it Sister*, and understand it all so, I hope you do not take amiss what I said.

Sister, *Not at all*, *I* am only grieved, That I do not see a Prospect of doing you all the good I would do.

Bro: I am such an Object now, that I do not see what Condition to desire. *Sister*, had my Father received me kindly, I should not have behaved unworthy of him; tho' in so ill a Condition, but this indignity has placed me so far below any Thing of a Son, That I shall be the contempt of his Servants, if I should come in.

Sister, What then shall I ask of him?

Bro: *Nothing Sister*, nothing at all! let him do just as he pleases.

Sister, Dear Brother, you act just the desperate Part now, where will it End!

Bro: In the Grave *Sister*, there I would have it End.

Sister, I am sorry to see you so obstinate in your own Ruin, however I'll do as well as I can for you.

She leaves him in this Humour, not be-

a

able to obtain any Thing of him; and goes directly to her Father, who was waiting impatiently to hear what his Son had said to her, being himself disposed to have treated him with the utmost Kindness, and Tenderness. As soon as he saw her, he began thus,

Fa. Well Child, have you seen your Brother?

Da. Yes Sir, I have seen a miserable Object, I am glad you did not see him at first!

Fa. Why so?

Da. I believe it would break your Heart to see him; he is Lame with a Wound in his Knee, one Arm cut off, thin and lean as one dying of a Consumption: Looks Pale, and Melancholy, to the last Degree, dejected and disconsolate. And with all, is mean and shabby in Cloaths; I never saw such an Object!

Fa. But what Temper is he in?

Da. An Accident has disordered him, otherwise he is as he used to be.

Fa. What Accident?

Da. Why, the Servant you sent, surprized him, with telling him too hastily, That you had ordered him to a Lodging, and not to bring him Home: and then to encrease it, the Coach very unhappily drove by the Door here; and it grieved him so much, to see himself brought to his Father's Door, and could not have Leave to come in; That he fell into a vio-

lent Passion, the People say he raged so much all Night, *tho' they knew not at what*. That they were afraid he would destroy himself; and he lays it is so to Heart still, That it grieves me, I know not what to do for him.

She Weeps

Fa. I heard indeed that he flew out into a Passion. The Fellow was a Fool to deliver his Message insolently, and also to bring him by the Door; for there was no need of it, but as for not coming in, he knew my Terms of his Return; and I know that he expected no other before he came over; but he might easily think my bringing him hither, was in Order to receive him kindly, and make his Submissions as Cheap to him, as I could

Da. He would ha' scrupled no Submissions I believe, if this had not happened.

Fa. But he does now it seems.

Da. No really, he bid me say to you, That he is very sorry he has given you Offence, and especially that he went away without your Leave, and that he will ask you Pardon with all his Heart.

Fa. But Child, does he come to the main Point; will he acknowledge his Sin against GOD and his Father, in refusing the just Measures taken for the Reformation of our Family, and his leaving the House upon that Account. For which I solemnly declare to

him,

him, *That if he went away upon that Score, he should never Return, but as a Penitent.*

Da. I hope Sir you will construe his asking you Pardon in general, to contain all that.

Fa. Why should I construe it *Child*, a Way that he does not declare it to be understood? for I have had some Information already, that he resolves the contrary.

Da. I am in hopes *Sir*, he will not declare that, and I hope you will let his Condition plead a little for him; Misery disorders our Tempers, as well as our Body.

Fa. But if his Misery will not allow him to make so just an Acknowledgment, nor he will not free me from the Engagements which he knows I am under; it is *he* refuses to come in, it is not *I* that shut him out; it is a sad Sign, if so much suffering, has not reach't his Heart, to Convince him of his Sin!

Da. Perhaps he may be better Sir, when his Concern at this Accident is a little over; I am loath to Affect him, for he is so Weak, I fear Disturbing him, may Kill him.

Fa. I could find in my Heart, to go to him my self.

Da. I cannot say *Sir*, whether it may be better or worse, if he be in Temper, it must needs be to his Advantage, to have you see him; but if his Disturbance at this Affair, is not over, tho' he be so low reduced, I fear his obsti-

obstinate Temper.

Fa. What does he think, That I take Occasion from his Misery, to force him to a Submission?

Da. I cannot say but *something of that* is upon his Mind.

Fa. Come then, I have a Thought of an Expedient to remove his Resentment; for I will not leave him the least Room to Complain of me, nor indeed do I desire, or value a forced Submission; if GOD has not wrought a Change upon him by his Afflictions, it is not my forceing him that will do any good: if he makes any Acknowledgments from the Power of his present Necessities, they will be but Hypocritical and insincere, and such a Kind of Penitence as will not be acceptable to GOD, I am sure will be very unsatisfying to me.

Da. That's very true Sir.

Fa. I'll tell you what you shall do; *go back to him*, and tell him, I had no Design to put any Affront upon him; or to suppress him in his Affliction at all: and if my Servant behaved ill to him, it was without my Order.

Da. That will be a great Comfort to him, *I dare say.*

Fa. Then *tell him*, he knows the Reason, why I cannot agree to take him Home; which Reason it is in his Power to remove when he pleases, and when he thinks fit to remove it effectually, he shall be received with as much Affection and Kindness as he can expect

pect ; but that it is below me to take Advantage of his Misery to oblige him to that Submission, tho' I have good Reason to do so: and that therefore I allow him to remove, whether he pleases to go for his Accomodation: and I will allow him 50 l. a Year for his Subsistance ; and there's 10 l. for him, for his present Supply : That thus he is left entirely free, either to comply with his Father, or not to comply with him, as G O D shall please to influence his Mind ; he can complain of no Force or ill Usage on my Side.

Da: Indeed Sir I must acknowledge for him it is more that he can expect ! I'll carry him the News, and remove him this very Night, for he will break his Heart, if he stays there, he reckons that he is only sent into an Hospital, *but whether shall I remove him* ?

Fa. Where ever he will go.

Da. Are you pleased Sir, That I shall carry him Home to my House ?

Fa. I will direct nothing in that.

[*She goes away to return to her Brother, and coming up to him, finds him on the Bed.*

Sister, Brother what are you not well ?

Bro: Never worse, Body and Mind.

Sister, Come will you get up ?

Bro. I cannot without help, I am an

Em-

Emblem of Mankind, *they can fall when they will; but cannot rise without help.*

Sister, Come I'll help you up, Alas! you are no heavier than a little Child.

She lifts him up.

Bro: Well have you seen my Father?

Sister, Dear Brother, We have such a Father, as no Children in the World but us, could ever offend.

Bro. Why, what does he say?

Sister, He is very Angry with his Servant for treating you so rudely, and bringing you up to the Door, and has turned him out of Doors for it: He says he ordered no such Thing, and that you may not lay any Thing of that to Heart, he has given me Leave to carry you away from hence, where I Will; or, *in short*, given you Leave to Remove to any Part of the Town, where you please.

Bro: Sister, I am willing enough to construe every Thing my Father does in the best Sence; but you mistake me, the Servant did not behave rudely, nor was it his Fault that I was brought up to the Door, the Servant only did his Message; it was the Nature of the Message, not the Manner of it, that was my Surprize; and for the rest, it was only casual or providential, the Way I suppose lay by my Father's Door; and the Coach Man who knew [illegible] drove that Way of Course.

But

But it is the Matter of the Message, and sending me hither as to an Hospital, to be kept in Sight of his House, and not admitted till I had performed *so* and *so*.

Sister, Well Brother, however my Father says you quite Mistake him, he says he should have been very glad your own Inclinations had led you to give him the Satisfaction which he thinks is your Debt; and which you know he cannot go from; that he hoped you had been convinc't by the Hand of GOD upon you, both of your past Sin, and your present Duty, but that he scorns to put any Force upon you, or to Press you by the Violence of your Necessities to comply with him, it must be GOD's Work, or it can be no Satisfaction to him, and therefore he leaves you to your Liberty.

Bro: What does my Father call Liberty? Sister he leaves me to my Liberty, what either to submit, or Starve, or come on my Knees to him, or beg, and Starve?

Sister, Dear Brother, see now how your Passions and impatience misguides you, my Father is none of those Tyrants; he says he hopes God may still open your Eyes, and that Repentance is God's Gift, it is not in his Power to force it; that however you refuse or decline your duty to him, he will do his duty to you, and leave the issue to Time, to which purpose he will allow you 50 l. a Year, for your handsome Subsistance, and has sent you 10 l. more

for your present Supply, and as you know the Conditions of Reconciliation to your Father, he says you have the Keys of his *Door*, and the Key of his Affections too, in your own Pocket; you may come in, when you please.

Bro: did my Father say all this?

Sister, Yes indeed, and if I had not prevented him, I believe he would ha' come and told you so himself.

Bro: Why did you hinder him?

Sister, Why Brother I was afraid of your Passions, least by too warm Expressions, you should do your self a Prejudice. and lessen that Affectionate Concern he has for you; I know the different Influence of Words, as they are Well or ill placed.

Bro: I am easily overcome by Kindness, never by Violence.

Sister, Will you not allow your Father the same Effect of Flesh and Blood.

Bro: Had my Father come hither in that Temper, and said those Words you say from him, I should ha' thrown my self at his Foot, with more Submission than he can expect.

Sister, Then I am sorry I hindered him, I'l go and fetch him still.

Bro: No, do not do that, I cannot promise for my self at a second Hand.

Sister, O Brother! you have not a Sense of the Crime, tho' you have some Sence o

the

the Kindness, I hope still Time may open your Eyes; for the present I would be glad to Recover your Spirits, and cheer your Thoughts a little, that you may consider Things with more Composure; will you tell me what Course you will take.

Bro. Any Course you shall direct, only to remove me from this Place.

Sister, I doubt not it grieves you to look out of the back Window, and see your Father's Garden Gate.

Bro. Many other things make this Place hateful to me.

Sister, Come you shall go Home with me to my House, I am sure my dear will make you very Welcome.

She takes him Home in her Coach, where she used him with all the Kindness and Tenderness in the World, but could never bring him to any Sence of his duty to God, or his Father; after some Time, *having still his Allowance from his Father*, he grew Melancholly, and disturbed, and offered two or three Times to destroy himself; but being recovered from that, he removed from his Sister's, and God having not pleased to Grant him either the Grace of Repentance for his former Sins, or to prevent future; he fell into an Extravagant Life, ill Company, and drinking, and died in a miserable Condition Atheistical and impenitent; having never seen his Father, nor so much as desiring it, till on his death Bed, being delirious, he cried out for *his Father!* his

Father,

Father! That he had abused his Father! and begged to see his Father! That he might ask him Forgiveness! but he died before his Father who happned to be in the Country, could be sent for.

FINIS.

EX BIBLIOTHECA
βίβλοι νόμος
TRIDENTINA